
GRAMMATICA
Anglo-Lusitanica :

Or a Short and Compendious

SYSTEM
OF AN

English and Portuguese

GRAMMAR.

GRAMMATICA
Anglo-Lusitana:

Or a Short and Compendious

SYSTEM



English and Portuguese

GRAMMAR.

GRAMMATICA Anglo-Lusitanica :

Or a Short and Compendious

SYSTEM

OF AN

English and Portuguese

GRAMMAR.

Containing

All the most Useful and Necessary Rules
of the *Syntax*; and Construction of the
Portuguese Tongue.

Together with some Useful Dialogues and
Colloquies, agreeable to common Conversa-
tion.

With a Vocabulary of Useful Words in *English* and
Portuguese.

Designed for, and fitted to all Capacities, and more
especially such whose Chance or Business may lead
them into any part of the World, where that Lan-
guage is used or esteemed.

By A. J.

LONDON: Printed by R. Janeway, and sold by Sam.
Crouch, the Corner of Popes-Head-Alley; and Rich. Par-
ker, at the Unicorn under the Royal-Exchange, Corn-
hill, 1702.

GRAMMATICA Anglo-Lusitana:

Or a Short and Compendious

SYSTEM

OF A N

English and Portuguese

GRAMMAR.

Containing

All the most useful and necessary Rules
of the Syntax and Construction of the
Portuguese Language.
Together with several Dialogues and
Colloquies for common Conver-



sation.
With a Vocabulary of useful Words in English and
Portuguese.
Designed for, and suited to all Capacities, and more
especially such whose Chance or Business may lead
them into any part of the World, where that Lan-
guage is used or esteemed.

By A. J.

LONDON: Printed by R. James, and sold by Sam-
son, the Corner of Popes Head Alley, and Rich. Pa-
ter, at the Station, under the Royal-Exchange: Con-
tinued, 1702.

THE
PREFACE
TO THE
READER.

UPON due Consideration of the indispensable Necessity of contriving some certain Rules, and a well directed Method for the more easie and successful Attainment of any Language; and that a Cursory smattering, govern'd altogether by the loose and straggling Directions of Sound and Sense, can never render it either useful or delightful in Conversation; the Composer of a Dictionary of the *Portuguese* Language, lately published, in Pursuance of the Proposal therein mentioned, thought he could not do better than to gratifie the World with this Manual, of a real Use and Service, tho' of a narrow Compass and Extent, and which at once may prove to

The PREFACE

be a full and intire Advice, as well as a constant Companion, and a Pocket Diversion; it is commonly seen that the vulgar Eye is most of all taken up with the Greatness of the Object, and People are wont to gaze at, and admire, what for being unmanageable, they cannot so easily comprehend: But this is most undoubtedly true, that as in the Creation, to be compendious, was of a distinguishing and lasting Reputation, so in Languages, as well as other things, it will lose nothing of its real Value and Esteem. To prevent therefore the common Error of doting upon Bulk, and the Grossness of Matter, the Design of this Abbreviature is to reduce all the necessary Rules of Construction into as narrow a Compass as is possible, and to comprize such Directions as shall be thought most conducive to that end in such orderly Paragraphs, as may clearly inform the Understanding, and be no Burden to the Memory; that an easie Application to those Rules and Precepts thus digested in a little time, may make them natural, and forming themselves into a Habit, may become more agreeable and valuable. It is to be presumed that there are very few sent abroad into the World to transact Affairs and Business, but

at some time or other have been more or less acquainted with the Parts of Speech, that are the Fundamentals of all Language. Now the Care that hath been herein taken, hath been chiefly employed in digesting those necessary Precepts into such a Method, that an easie Survey of them may renew the Impressions of those early Instructions, and with the Observations subjoined to each Particular, in a little time Master all that can seem puzzling in the Language: And because Correspondence and Conversation are the two main Ends and Advantages of all Languages; that such necessary Helps might not be wanting to this, here are purposely subjoined, by way of an Appendix, some few Forms of writing that may be serviceable to the Man of Business upon several Occasions, and more clearly illustrate all the necessary Rules of Construction to the most ordinary Capacity; and for its yet farther Advancement towards the Use of Humane Society, it is thought not improper to add, as a Close, some familiar Discourses and Dialogues, all distinctly accented, that the inquisitive Traveller, who either resides in, or passes through those Countries, may not (for his barbarous

The PREFACE, &c.

Pronunciation) be either ridiculed by those with whom he converseth, or misunderstood in his Enquiries.

The Design thus laid together, in short, aims at nothing more than a general Good to be procured by a plain and easie Method, and doubts not of its Acceptance, from the Prospect it hath of an answerable Success to all those whose Curiosity or Affairs shall induce them to peruse it.

ERRATA.

Page 157. line 12. for disposto, read dispósto; l. 14. f. estevi, r. estive; l. 15. f. malectas, r. maleitas; p. 159. l. 1. f. erguése érguese; l. 21. f. çapatos, r. çapatos; p. 160. l. 2. f. contémta, r. constante; l. 6. f. hum, r. huns; l. 17. f. queyo, r. queijo; l. 19. f. ténito, r. tinto; l. 21. f. praválla, r. proválla; l. 31. f. píccaro, r. pícaro.

GRAM.

GRAMMATICA

Anglo-Lusitanica.

TO avoid any thing that may appear superfluous, I shall say little to their Alphabet, as being more or less the same with the Latin; but as to the Pronunciation, we may take notice, that the Portuguese endeavour to express every Word with an open Breath and Air, suffering no Termination with any Letter that shall be mute or incapable of Sound, which will most easily appear to an observing and distinguishing Ear in Conversation with the Natives.

The first Letter A is pronounced with a full and open Mouth, as in the Word Aqua or Agua, Water.

The Letter B is pronounced agreeably to the other Modern Languages, as in the Word, Bom, Good.

The Letter C before a, o, u, is pronounced like K, as in the Words, Casa, an House; Cova, a Den or Hole; Curral, a Fold or Repository for Cattle; before e and i it is pronounced as with a dash or tail, as f, in the Words Cessár, to cease; Cingir, to gird or bind; but when written with a dash, it is pronounced with more force mixt with a kind of Aspiration, as in the Word Abraçar, to embrace.

D, as commonly in other Languages, with a soft and easy Breath, as in the Word Defender, to defend.

E is pronounced with a Mouth somewhat more streightened than the Letter A, as in the Word Estár, to be.

F,

F, with a Compression of the lower Lip to the upper Teeth, as in the Words Fé, Faith; Fôme, Hunger.

G is as commonly by the inner part of the Mouth averting the Root of the Tongue basily, as in the English Words, Gall, Gout, Gun; but before e and i with a soft and easie Aspiration, like j Consonant, as in the Words Regedor, Governour or Rector; and Região, a Region or Country.

H, in the Latin, and some other Languages, is only an Aspiration; but in this, when written after the Letters c, n, l, hath the Force of a Letter, as in the following Particles cha, che, chi, cho, chu; nha, nho, nhi, nho, nhu; lha, lhe, lhi, lho, lhu, and is pronounced by applying the point of the Tongue to the middle of the Palate with a hasty Aversion, as an i breve; as in the Words Tenho, I have; Linho, Flax; Sonho, a Dream; and unha, a Nail; as if they were written, Ténio, línio, fónio, únio, &c.

I, which is the Vowel pronounced with the Mouth open, but with a more limited Breath than E, as in Ví, I have seen; Lí, I have read; Rí, I have laugh'd; as ee Eng.

J, the Consonant, is pronounced like G before E, but is never placed before i the Vowel, but always before a, e, o, u, as in the following Words, Janélla, a Window; Jesus, Jesus; Jogo, Play; Juiz, a Judge.

L, whether single or double, is always pronounced in the same manner, applying the forepart of the Tongue to the Palate near to the upper Teeth, as in the following Words, Ládo, aside; Ladrão, a Thief; Ladéyra, a Descent, &c.

M is pronounced by a sudden opening the Lips, the soft shut, as in these Words, Mácho, a Male; Mudo, one that is dumb; Moucha, a kind of Horn, &c.

N is pronounced by applying the Tongue's tip to the beginning of the Palate with a sudden Constraint, as in these Words; Nação, a Nation; Nome, a Name; Nuvem, a Cloud.

O is expressed by opening the Mouth, and extending the Lips in a round Form, as in the Word *Ovo*, an Egg.

P is pronounced by opening the Lips that were close shut with a sudden and brisk Aspiration, as in the following Words, *Palavra*, a Word; *Pedir*, to desire; *Punhal*, a Ponyard.

Q is pronounced, by applying half the Tongue to half the Palate, as in the Letter C, as in these, *Cómo* quer que, when, or whereas, &c. But notwithstanding it is an imperfect Letter without the help of a U, and in all Words is pronounced like a K, only in several Words, in which an a followeth it; as in *qual*, *quándo*, *quádra*, where the u hath its full Force and Sound.

R is expressed with a forceable Aspiration, and much stronger when doubled, as in the following Words; *Fóra*, out or without; *Terra*, Earth or Land; *Ria*, a River.

S is pronounced as is usual in other Languages, as in the Word, *Cása*, an House.

T is almost expressed like D, but with a more forceable Aversion of the Tongue from the Teeth, as in these Words; *Trazér*, to bring; *Tolhér*, to forbid; *Tussir*, to cough.

U, the Vowel, is pronounced with open Mouth; but with the Lips more protense than in O, as in these Words, *Fugir*, to fly; *Furór*, fury.

V Consonant is pronounced almost like F, disjoining the higher Teeth from the lower Lip, whereas they were so close united before, that no Breath could escape before the Mouth be opened, as in the following Words, *Vazia*, empty; *Vou*, I go; *Vir*, to come.

X is pronounced like sh, by applying half the Tongue to the Palate, in form of a Channel, as in these Words; *Queyxáda*, a Gheeke-bone; *Queyxúme*, a Complaint; *Queyxátle*, to complain; only in some Words, beginning with an a and e, in which x hath its natural Force, as in *Axúngia*, *Exémpló*, &c.

Y,

Y, as in other Languages, almost like I, but somewhat fainter; as in Pay, a Father; Ley, a Law.

Z is pronounced almost like C, but stronger, and with a kind of Sibilation or Noise; as in these Words; Zimbro, a Juniper-tree; Zonír, to make a noise; Zurrír, to beat with a Club.

As for the *Nouns*, as in all our modern Languages, so in this the first and common Division is into Substantive and Adjective. This being known to all Children admitted in Schools, needs no other Explication than by some few Examples, as follow.

Nouns Substantive : as *Pédro, Peter ; Pédra, a Stone ; Páo, Wood ; Témplo, a Church ; Cása, an House ;* which, to make a Sentence, are as follow ; *Pédro vive, Peter lives ; A pédra fére, the Stone strikes, hits or wounds ; O Páo créce, the Wood or Stake grows ; O Témplo órna a cidade, the Church beautifies the City ; A Cása agasalha o homem, the House treats or entertains the Man.*

A Noun Adjective, that cannot subsist without a Substantive for its Support, is known by the following Examples; *Pédro he douto*, Peter is learned; *A Pédra he dura*, the Stone is hard; *O páo he relíco*, the Wood is brittle; *O Témplo he fermoso*, the Church is beautiful; all which Examples shew that the Adjectives, *douto*, *dúro*, *relíco*, and *fermoso*, are insignificant, without their Substantive Companions.

Nouns Substantive are { Proper,
Appellative.

Proper in the Portuguese Tongue signifie in the singular Number one certain and determinate thing; as *Pédro, Paulo, Thomás, Lóndres, Lisbóa, Thaméle, Téjo, &c.* but Antiquity tells us, That the Plural Number hath been in use; as *Pédros, Paulos, Téjos, Lusitanos;* which

which being so far discrepant from the Latin, seem both uncouth and obsolete.

A Noun Substantive Appellative is what signifies an uncertain and common thing; as in this Language, *Arvore*, signifies a Tree; *Pedra*, a Stone; *Cabeça*, a Head; *Monte*, a Hill or Mountain; *Réyno*, a Kingdom; because all these contain several Kinds or Species under them; to this likewise are related the Collectives, which in a Singular Number signify a Multitude; as *Povo*, the common People; *Multidão*, a Multitude; *Gente*, a number of Persons in Company; *Exército*, an Army.

Adjectives in this Language are some of them common to all the Genders; as *Grande*, Great; *Léve*, Light; *Brève*, Short; *Forte*, Strong; *Mayor*, Greater; *Menor*, Lesser; for they commonly say, *Boy grande*, a great Ox; *Vaca grande*, a great Cow; *Páo léve*, light Wood; *Lãa léve*, light Wool; *Tempo brève*, a short time; *Manhã brève*, a short Morning; *Cavállo forte*, a strong Horse; *Egão forte*, a strong Man; *Hómen mayor ou menor*, a greater or lesser Man.

Adjectives of the other range are only of two Forms; as for Example *Fermôsa* & *fermôsa*, beautiful; *Alto* & *alta*, high; *Pequeno* & *pequena*, little; *Altíssimo* & *altíssima*, most high; the first Form serves for the Substantive of the Masculine Gender; and (if any) for the Neuter, and the second for the Feminine; there being no Adjective in this Language of a triple Form, as among the Romans.

The Adjective is here known by its Substantive that is allied to it; as *Fermôsa ave*, a beautiful Bird; *Féyo monstro*, an ugly Monster; or else by way of Circumlocution expressed by one Word, call'd *Côusa*, or thing; which upon several Occasions is made use of for a Substantive; as for instance, *Nath ha côusa mais dura que o diamante*, there is nothing harder than a Diamond.

This

This Noun Adjective admits of many Subdivisions, which are as follow.

Interrogative; when we inquire after any thing; v. g. Quem? who? Qual de nos ou de vos? which of us, or you? Quanto? how much? Quantos? how many? Qual? which?

Relative is that which refers you to an Antecedent Substantive, and is very often expressed by the word Que, not distinguishing either Number or Gender; v. g. O homem que peccou, the Man that sinned; a Molher que peccou, the Woman that sinned; Os homens que peccaram, the Men that sinned; As molheres que peccaram, the Women that sinned.

Sometimes it is otherwise expressed; by O qual de a qual, in the Singular; & os quaes, de as quaes, in the Plural; v. g. O homem o qual, os homens os quaes, a molher a qual, as molheres as quaes.

The Noun Possessive signifies a thing possessed belonging to some Body; as for Examples, Cavallo Real, a Royal Horse; Soldado Pompeyano, a Soldier of Pompey's Army.

An Adjective that declares a Man's Country, is commonly expressed in short; Lisbonense, one of Lisbon; Evorense, one of Evora, &c. or otherwise, Filho de Lisboa, a Son of, or born in Lisbon; Filho de Evora, filho de Braga, &c.

There are other Adjectives which signify or refer to a Nation or Country; as Grego, a Greek; Italiano, an Italian; Portuguez, a Portugeze; Castellano, a Spaniard; &c.

There are other called Numerals of which kind the first called Cardinal are, Hum, One; Tres, Three; Quatro, Four; Cinco, Five; &c. The other Ordinals are, Priméyro, First; Segundo, Second; Tercéyro, Third; &c. and others distributive; as Témos, Thirds; Quaternos, Fourths; Sénos, Sixes.

These Nouns are commonly divided into such as are Positive, which signifie a thing absolutely and simply, as Grande, great; Pequeno, small.

Comparative; as Mayor, greater; Menor, lesser.

Superlative, either in the highest or lowest degree; as Máximo, greatest; Mínimo, least.

Here it may be noted, That the Portuguese make use of their Comparatives and Superlatives in three distinct manners, as follow:

1. By the Nouns in themselves. Comparative; as Mayor, greater; Menor, lesser; Inferior, Superior.

2. By the Superlatives that imitate the Latin; as for Example, Máximo, greatest; Mínimo, least; Claríssimo, most eminent; Estudiosíssimo, most studious; Perfeitíssimo, most perfect.

3. By annexing one of these two Words, Mays or menos, more or less, to any Noun; v. g. Mays perfeito, more perfect; Mays estudioso, more studious; Mays claro, more eminent; Mays sabio, more wise; Mays entendido, more understanding; Menos discreto, less discreet; Menos valente, not so valiant; Menos gentil, less accomplish'd, or gentle, or handsome; Menos animoso, less courageous.

Where it may be noted, that the same Adjective in the Portuguese Tongue, may serve both for a Comparative and Superlative, as in the following Examples: Comparative, when one thing is compared with another of the same or different kind; v. g. Pedro he mays valente que António, ou que hum Leão, Peter is more valiant than Antonio, or than a Lion.

Comparative of one with many, or of many with many of a different kind; v. g. Hum Europeo he mays valente que muitos Asiáticos, One European is more valiant than many Asiatics; or Os Europeos sam mays valentes que os Asiáticos, The Europeans are more valiant than the People of Asia.

Superlatives are such as follow, when one thing is compared with many, or many with many of the same kind;

kind; v. g. Pedro Portuguez he mays valente que todos, ou de todos os Portuguezes, Peter a Portuguese is the most valiant of the Portuguese; or, Os Portuguezes sam mays valentes que todos, ou de todos os homens, The Portuguese are the most valiant of all Men. By which it appears that in this Language every Adjective may be made both Comparative and Superlative by the Assistance of mays & menos.

Primitives are such as have many others derived from them, as from Pedra, a Stone; arise Pedregal, a stony place; Pedregulha, Gravel; Pedregoso, stony; Pedreya, pedreya, a Stone-cutter; Pedrada, a blow with a Stone; with many others of the like Nature, which do much enrich the Portuguese Language.

Here it may be noted, that we have many Words ending in áda, which in other Languages cannot be expressed but by Circumlocution; as Pedrada, a blow with a Stone; Pancada, a blow with a Stick or Club; Cutelada, a cut with a Sword; Estocada, a stab with a Sword or Dagger.

For the Declinations and Cases in this Language, the Method is more facil and easie than in most others, for the Singular Number is always express'd by the same Letter as the Plural, with some little Alteration at last, which is soon understood.

The general Rule for Number is Singular and Plural; the Singular, importing only one particular thing; as Pedro, Peter; Pedra, a Stone; Céu, Heaven; Terra, Earth.

The Plural Number comprehends more than one; v. g. Pedros; as Dous Pedros, two Peters by name; Pedras, Stones; Céos, Heavens; Terras, Earths, &c. Which Numbers are distinguished by two Rules, as follows.

First, As oft as these Particles precede any word, being a, o; da, do; na, no; it is a certain sign of the Singular Number; v. g. a Casa, the House; o Templo, the

the Church; ao Têmplo, to the Church; da Cásá, from the House; do Têmplo, from the Church; na Cásá, in the House; no Têmplo, in the Church; and as oft as these Particles antecede a word by an additional s, they denote the Plural Number, v. g. as Cásas, os Têmplos, aos Têmplos, &c. which likewise is the same, if any Adjective interpose, v. g. de grande Cásá, from a great House; de grandes Cásas, from great Houses; de grande Têmplo e de grandes Têmplos, &c.

Where you may note, That the Particle de serves both Numbers; as, de Cásá, de Cásas, de Têmplo, de Têmplos; which likewise is observable in the following Particles, v. g. Péra, for; em, in; com, with; sem, without; péra a Cásá ou as Cásas, em Cásá ou sem Cásá, com Cásá ou com Cásas, sem Cásá ou sem Cásas, &c.

So that this General Rule may take place, that where the Letter s terminates the word, it is the Plural Number, and where not, it is the Singular, v. g. Terras lúrgas, great Countries; Têmplos famosos, famed Churches; Homens doutos, learned Men; Mulheres virtuófas, virtuous Women. Examples of the second sort are, Terra fértil, a fruitful Land; Têmplo fermoso, a beautiful Church; Homem douto, a learned Man; Mulher boa, a good Woman, &c.

There are some Exceptions to this Rule of several Words, that being of the Singular Number end with an s; as for Example, Déos, God; Cáys, a Key on the shoar; Arráys, the Master of a Boat; Gys, Chalk; Cuscús, a sort of eatable Flower that comes from Africa; Alcacús, Liquorish, &c. as also proper Names, as, Fernández, Méndez, Rodríguez, Pigrez, together with several irregular names and words, which appearing to be of the Plural Number, have a Singular Signification, as will be seen hereafter.

The next that will follow in order are Participles and Pronouns, the one partaking of the Noun and the Verb, the other of the Substantive and Adjective; the Participle

is expressed more at large than the Latin, as, o que Ama, loving; o que Amava, which loved; o que Lê, reading; o que Lia, which did read; altho' not improperly some write o Amânte & a Amânte, the Lover; o Lente & a Lente, the Reader. The Preterperfect-Tense, as loved or read is thus expressed, Côusa amada, and côusa lido.

The Participle of the Future-tense, As, I am about to Love, or I am about to Read, thus; Hey de már, hey de jer. In the Passive Voice, To be loved, and to be read, thus, O que ha de ser amado ou lido.

Pronouns are partly Primitive, and partly Derivative; the Primitive as follows, Eu, I; tu, thou; si, him; este ou esta, this; estoutro ou estoutra, the other; elle ou ella, aquêlle ou aquêlla, he or she; as esse ou essa, he or she; o mêsmo and a mêsmo, the same.

Pronouns derived from their Primitives, are as follows, Méu & minha, mine; téu & tua, thine; séu & sua, his; nôsso & nôssa, ours; vósso & vóssoa, yours. To which may be added, of our Country, or your Country, expressed by a Periphrasis, Os da nôssa terra ou parcialidade, os da vóssoa terra ou parcialidade.

The Portuguese Pronoun Adjectives are declined like other Adjectives, but the Substantives are anomolous and irregular; as for instance, in the Pronoun, Eu, I, Nominative; Genitive, de mim, of me; Dative, a mim ou péra mim, to me; Accusative, péra mim ou á mim, me; Vocative, O eu, O I; Ablative, de mim ou á mim, from me, or in me; in the Plural Number, nos, we; Genitive, de nos, from us; Dative, á nos ou péra nos, to us; Accusative, péra nos ou á nos, us; Vocative, O nos; Ablative, de nos ou com nos ou con-nôsko, from or with us.

Here is likewise used the Vocative of the Pronoun, Eu, which in other Languages is seldom met withal, v. g. O ditôso eu, O happy that I am; O mosino de mim, O miserable that I am; O ditôso nos, O happy that we are, &c.

Note,

Note, That sometimes the same Pronoun admits of a Dative, or Accusative extraordinary, as, me, without any other Particle; as for Example, Nam me cūro disso ou nam me cūro eu disso, I care not for this; nam me vay náda nisso, this doth not concern me. So likewise in the Plural Number, nam nós curámos d'isso ou nam nós curámos nós d'isso, we care not for this; nam nós vay náda n'isso, this doth not concern us. Sometimes also á mim is added in the Singular, and a nos in the Plural Number, v. g. Nam me vay a mim náda n'isso, this doth not at all concern me; nam nós vay á nós náda n'isso, this doth not concern us.

Sometimes in lieu of the Pronoun Eu, I, these Particles mo, ma, in the Singular, & mos, mas, in the Plural Number, are made use of; v. g. Muy cáro vendéomo, i. e. líuro, he sold it me very dear, i. e. the Book; muy cára vendéoma ou vendéoma muy cára, i. e. seda, he sold it me very dear, i. e. the Silk; so in the Plural, Vendéomos muy cáros ou muy cáros mos vendéo, i. e. livros, he sold them me very dear, i. e. the Books; vendéomas muy cáras ou muy cáras mas vendéo, i. e. as sedas, he sold them me very dear, i. e. the Silks.

The Pronoun Tu, thou, is thus declined. In the Singular Number, Nominative Tu, thou; Gen. de ti, of thee; Dat. á ti ou pára ti, to thee; Accus. péra ti ou á ti, thee; Voc. O tu, O thou; Ab. de ti, of or from thee; em ti, in thee; sem ti, without thee; contigo, with thee. In the Plural, Vos, ye or you; Gen. de vos, of or from you; em vos, in you; sem vós, without you; convôco, with you.

It likewise admits both in the Singular and Plural, a Dative and Accusative Case, without any other Particle, v. g. te & vos; Example, Douto de graça ou de graça to dou, i. e. o livro, I give thee the Book freely, I give it thee freely; douita de graça ou de graça ta dou, i. e. seda, I give it thee freely, that is, the Silk; and so in the Plural, Douitos de graça, de graça tos dou,

dou, i. e. os livros, dóutas de graça, de graça tas dou, i. e. as sedas, I give thee them freely, i. e. the Silks.

In the same form the Particles lho & lha are commonly used; as, doulho de graça, & doulha de graça, I give it him freely.

It is to be noted, The Pronoun vós is usual both for a Singular and Plural Number; Example, Vós faréys ista, thou shalt do this; in the Plural to many, Vós fareis isto, you shall do this.

The Pronoun si, him, admits of no Nominative or Vocative in either Number, but is thus declined; Gen. De si, of him; Dat. a si ou péra si, to him; Accus. péra si ou á si, him; Ablat. de si, of or from him; em si, in him; consigo, with him.

It likewise admits of a Dative and Accusative without any other Particle; Example, Nam se cura d'isso ou nam se cura elle d'isso, he cares not for this; nam se lhe dá d'isso nam se lhe dá á elle d'isso, the same. In the Plural, Nam se curam d'isso nam se curam elles d'isso, They are not concerned at it, or care not for it.

Note, That the Pronouns, me, te, si, are often joined with Verbs of the three Conjugations, which in the Infinitive-mood are terminated with the Syllable se, v. g. Assanharse, to be exasperated; entreterse, to be detained; abrirse, to be opened. It is also usual to say, Eu me assanho, I am exasperated; elle se assanha, he is exasperated; so in the Plural, Nos nos assanhámos, we are exasperated; vos vos assanhays, you are exasperated; elles se assanhão, they are exasperated.

*The Pronouns Elle, aquélla, éste, ésse, he, this or that; besides their ordinary Declinations as Adjectives, have some frequent and peculiar Irregularities to be taken notice of; v. g. Elle is in common Speech explained by the Particle, lhe in the Singular, and lhes in the Plural; and sometimes a Case is added, as, á elle and á elles; Example, Nam se lhe dá d'isso, and nam se
lhe*

lhes dá á elle d'isso, *he cares not for it; so in the Plural, Nam se lhes dá d'isso ou nam se lhes dá á elles d'isso, they care not for it, or value it not.*

Observe that the Particle O and os are often equivalent to á elle and á elles; Example, Eu o mataréy ou eu o mataréy á elle, I will kill him; so in the Plural, Eu os mataréy ou eu os mataréy á elles, I will kill them. The same in the Feminine, Eu a mataréy á ella, and eu as mataréy á ellas, I will kill her or them.

To which may be added, that the Pronoun Elle joined to the Primitive Tu, makes use of the Spanish Particles, lo, los, la, las; Example, Eu volo mataréy, vóla mataréy, I will kill him or her for you; so in the Plural, Eu vólos ou vólas mataréy, I will kill them for you; the Letter s being lost in both Numbers.

The Pronoun Aquéle, that, besides its regular Declination with the rest of the Adjectives, hath its peculiar Irregularities thro' all the Cases in the Singular Number, except the Vocative; Example, Nom. Aquillo, that; Genit. d'aquillo, of that; Dat. á aquillo ou péra aquillo, to that; Accus. péra isto ou isso, this; Ablat. d'isto ou d'isso, of or from this; sein isto ou isso, without this; nisto ou nisso, in this.

Here we may Note, that of all the Pronouns only Eu and Tu, I and Thou, have the Vocative Case in both Numbers, but the rest are wanting in both.

The other Pronouns; as for Example, Elle, aquéle, este, esse, this and that, admit of the Adjunctive Particles in both Numbers and Genders, No, na, nos, nas, in such a Form, that only the Letter N remains for an Indication. As for Example, Nelle, nella, nelles, nél-las; In it, him or them; in the same form, Naquéle, naquella, naquélles, naquéllas, néste, nésta, néstes, néstas, nésse, néssa, nésses, néssas, &c. The same use is in the Pronouns that are Neuters only in the Singular Number, v. g. Naquillo, in that; Nisto, in this; Nisso, in this.

We likewise join the word Oútro to the forementioned

Pronouns, Aquéle, éste, ésse; for *Example*, Aquellouítro, *that other*; Estouítro, essouítro, *this other*.

To which may be added, that to the forefaid *Pronouns* Eu, I; Tu, Thou; Elle aquéle, he or that; & ésse, the same, are often joined the words *mésmo* & *mésma* in the *Singular*, e os *mésmos* and as *mésmas* in the *Plural*. *Example*, Eu, tu, elle, aquéle, ésse *mésmo*, I, thou, he, that are the same; so in the *Feminine*, Ella, aquélla, éssa *mésma*; the *Plural* agrees with the same; Nos, vos, éllés, aquéllés, éssés *mésmos*, we, you, they, themselves; *Feminine*, éllas, aquéllas, éssas, *mésmas*, they, themselves.

The *Declination* of *Nouns* admits not a *Variety* of *Cases* as was usual with the *Romans*, but by prefixing the following *Particles*, a, o, ao, as, aos, de, da, do, dos, and these *Prepositions*, na, no, nas, nos, péra, em, com, sem, seem something equivalent, as will appear by the following *Example* in the word *Témplo*, a *Church*; *singular*, N. *masculine*; O *Témplo*, a, or the *Church*; *Nom. Gen.* do *Témplo*, of the *Church*; *Dat.* ao *Témplo*, ou péra o *Témplo*, to the *Church*; *Accus.* o *Témplo* ao *Témplo*, and péra o *Témplo*, the *Church*; *Voc.* ô *Témplo*, O *Church*; *Ablat.* de *Témplo*, of or from a *Church*; no *Témplo*, in the *Church*; em *Témplo*, in a *Church*; com *Témplo*, with a *Church*; sem *Témplo*, without a *Church*.

So in the *Plural Number*, os *Témplos*, the *Churches*; *Gen.* de *Témplos* ou dos *Témplos*, of *Churches*, or of the *Churches*; aos *Témplos* ou péra os *Témplos*, to the *Churches*; *Accus.* os *Témplos*, aos *Témplos*, and péra os *Témplos*, the *Churches*; *Voc.* O *Témplos*, O *Churches*; *Ablat.* de *Témplos*, of or from *Churches*; dos *Témplos*, of or from the *Churches*; em *Témplos*, in *Churches*; nos *Témplos*, in the *Churches*; com, with; and sem *Témplos*, without *Churches*. After the same manner all *Portuguéze Words* are declined.

Example, of the *Feminine Gender* in the word *Cása*, a *House*; *Nom.* a *Cása*, a, or the *House*; *Gen.* de *Cása*, of

of an House, ou da Cáa, of the House; *Dat.* a Cáa ou pera a Cáa, to the House; *Accus.* a Cáa ou pera a Cáa, the House; *Vocat.* o Cáa, O House; *Ablat.* de Cáa, of or from a House; da Cáa, of or from the House; em Cáa na Cáa, in, in the House; com, with; sem, without a House.

In the Plural, *Nom.* as Cáas, the Houses; *Gen.* de Cáas, of Houses; ou das Cáas, of the Houses; *Dat.* as Cáas ou as Cáas, to the Houses; *Accus.* as Cáas ou as Cáas, ou pera as Cáas, the Houses; *Vocat.* o Cáas, O Houses; *Ablat.* de Cáas, of or from Houses; das Cáas, of or from the Houses; nas Cáas, in the Houses; com & sem Cáas, with and without Houses. Thus all Nouns, both Adjective and Substantive, are declined in this Language.

The Particles, a, o, de, da, do, no, na, serve only for the Singular Number, as, os, aos, das, dos, nas, nos, for the Plural; but the Particles pera, for or to; em, in; com, with; sem, without; serve both Singular and Plural.

Example, Vou pera a Cáa, ou pera o Têmplo, I go to the House, home or to the Church; Vou pera as Cáas ou pera os Têmplos, I go to the Houses, or to the Churches; Mando em Cáa ou em o Têmplo, I command in the House, or in the Church; Mando em as Cáas, ou em os Têmplos, I command in the Houses, or in Churches; Trôco a minha herdade com a cáa com o Têmplo, I change my Inheritance with a House or Church; Trôco as minhas herdades com as Cáas, com os Têmplos, in the Plural. Fico sem a cáa ou sem o Têmplo, I remain without the House or Church; so in the Plural, fico sem as Cáas sem os Têmplos, I remain without Houses or Churches.

To know the Termination of Words in this Language, as it is difficult, so it is very necessary, and therefore in this place shall take notice, first of Substantives, then of Adjectives.

All Substantives in the Portuguese Tongue end either

with the five Vowels, a, e, i, o, u, or these five Consonants, l, m, r, f, z; which complicated with the Vowels, make al, el, il, ol, ul; am, em, im, om, um; ar, er, ir, or, ur; as, es, is, os, us; az, ez, iz, oz, uz; some few end in that imperfect Vowel y.

A. First, to begin with the Letter a, or aa the Diphthong, many Substantives, both proper and Appellative, are terminated by it; as Antónia, Anthony; for a Female, Maria, Mary; Alma, a Soul; Vida, Life; Vista, Sight; Romaa, a Pomegranate; Maçaa, an Apple; Avelaa, a small or Hasel-nut. The Plural is made by the Addition of the Letter s; as Antónias, Marias, Almas, Vistas, and some write Románs, Maçáns, Ave-láns, Pomegranates, Apples, Nuts.

E. Several Substantives are terminated with the Vowel e, some proper; as Albuquerque, Duárte, Edward; others Diminutive; as Pedréte, of or from Peter, or little Peter; & Francisquète, the same; of or from Francis, or little Francis. Others Appellative; as Barréte, a Cap; Capóte, a Cloak; Basbáque, a Fool; and many others, which to make the Plural Number only admit of the Letter s; as Barrétes, Caps; Capótes, Cloaks, Basbáques, &c. so in proper Names; as Albuquerque, Duártes, Francisquêtes, Pedrétes.

I. Terminates very few Substantives in the Singular Number; as Thali, a Belt; Nebri, an Hawk; Rubi, a Ruby; Biberequi, an Augre, Wimple or Piercer.

Y. Likewise hath its place in several words; as Pay, Father; May, Mother; Ley, Law; Rey, King; Grey, a Flock or Herd. The former make their Plurals in iys; as Thaliys, Nebriys, Rubiys, Biberequiys, the latter in ys; as Pays, Mays, Leys, Reys, Greys.

O. The Letter o hath no want of Words for its Termination: First, proper, as António, Bento, &c. then Appellative; as Banco, a Stool; Livro, a Book; Prêgo, a Nail; which are made Plural by the Addition of the Letter s; as Bancos, livros, prêgos; Stools, Books, Nails; and so in many Thousands, &c.

U. The

U. The Vowel *u* hath not so many Terminations as the former; for Example, *Perú*, a Turkey; *Bambú*, an Indian Cane; *Mú*, a Mule; *Bréu*, Pitch; *Camateu*, the golden Eele; *Belzebú*, Belzebub; *Hebréu*, an Hebrew; *Judéu*, a Jew; *Fariséu*, a Pharisee; which are made likewise Plurals, by the Addition of the Letter *s*, as *Perús*, *Bambús*, *Mús*, *Bréus*, *Camateús*, &c.

For the Consonants, with the antecedent Vowels adjoined, we have the following Rule, viz.

Al hath its Proper and Appellative Names; Proper, as *Pascoál*, *Vidál*, &c. Appellative; *Punhál*, a Ponyard; *Aventál*, an Apron; *Bocál de póco*, the Mouth of the Well; *Pinhéyrál*, a pine-grove; *Mayorál*, Lord of a Mannor or Prince. All which in the Plural Number end in *ays*, changing the Letter *l* into *ys*; as *Punháys*, *auentáys*, &c.

El hath many Substantives of both Kinds; Proper, such as are *Mancel*, *Gabriel*, *Daniel*; Appellatives, as *Almotacél*, an Officer of Justice; *Bacharél*, a Bachelor of Arts; *Capitel*, the Head of a Pillar; which make their Plurals in *ays*, as *Mandéys*, *Gabrieys*, *Daniéys*, *Almotacéys*, *Bacharéys* and *Capiteys*.

Il hath likewise its proper Names, as well as Appellative; Proper are such as *Gil*, *Cordouil*, of Corduba; *Abril*, the Month of April. Appellatives are such as follow; as *Anil*, Copperace; *Barril*, a Barrel; *Ceytil*, a Halfpenny; *Gomil*, a Laver; *Fumil*, a Funnel, which in the Plural end in *iys*, changing the Letter *l* into *ys*; as *Aniys*, *Ceytiys*, *Gomiys*, &c.

Ol terminates very few Words in this Language, v.g. *Sol*, Sun; *Caracól*, a Snail; *Anzól*, a Fish-hook; *Lencól*, a Sheet; which make their Plural end in *oys*, as *Soys*, *Caracóys*, *Anzóys*, *Lencóys*.

Ul likewise hath but few Words that end in it, either Proper; as *Saul*, *Paul*; or Appellative, as *Sul*, the South; *Tafúl*, a Gamester, which in the Plural change the Letter into *ys*; as *Suys*, *Satúys*, *Tafúys*.

Am hath very many Substantives that end in it, as well

well Proper; as Joám, *John*; Damiám, *Damon*; as Appellative, v. g. Trouám, *Thunder*; Esquadrám, *a Squadron*; Capitám, *a Captain*; Irmám, *a Brother*; Villám, *a Country Fellow, and a Villain*; the Plurals of which end all in s, but not in the same Form; v. g. some end in ôes, as, Trouám, Trouoês, others in âes; as, Capitám, capitâes; and others in aos, as Cortezám, *a Courtier*; Cortezãos.

Em admits of some Proper Names; as Jerusalém, Belém, Bêthlehém, but many Appellatives, ex. gr. Adém de vaca, *a Piece of Beef cut from the Back of the Ox or Cow*; Bedém ou láya de agua, *a Water-cloak or Coat*; Rebém de comitre, *a Boatswain or Cockswain*; Almazém, *a Warehouse*; Adem, *a Duck*. All which in the Plural change em into ens; as Affens, Bedéns, Almazéns, Adens.

Im hath some Proper Names; as Chim, *a Chinese*; Severim, *Severine or Severinus*; and many more Appellatives, v. g. Rocím, *a Horse*; Motím, *a Mutiny*; Bocaxím, *a Weft of Thread or Linnen*; Marfim, *Ivory*; Espadím, *a little Sword*; Farcosím, *a Grafting*. All which in the Plural change m into ns; as Rocíns, Motíns, Bocaxíns, Marfíns, Espadíns, Farcosíns.

Om hath but few Terminations, v. g. Tom, *a Tone*; Som, *a Sound*; Dom, *a Gift*; Rhom, *a Medicine of that name*; which in the Plural change the m into ns; as Tons, Sons, Rhons, Except; Dom making its Plural in Dões.

Um admits several of that Termination; as Atúm, *Tunny-fish*; Bodúm, *a rank goatish smell*; Debrúm, *a Hem*; Jejúm, *a fast*. All which in the Plural end in uns; as Atúns, Bodúns, Debrúns, Jejúns.

Ar hath both its Proper and Appellatives; Example in the first, Gaspár, Jaspár, Cesár; in the second such as follow, Ar, *the Air*; Acúcar, *Sugar*; Néctar, *Nectar*; Polegár, *the Thumb*; Manjár, *Food*; Bázár, *a bezoar-stone*; which are all made Plurals, by adding the Syllable

ble es; as Ares, Açúcares, Néctares, Polegáres, Manjâres, Bazâres.

Er likewise hath its Share both of Nouns Proper and Appellative; Proper, as Alenquer, Almostér; Appellative, such as are Aluguér, the Hire or Rent of a House, Lodge, Beast, or any thing else to be lett; Mistér, an assistant to the Mayor; or Juíz do pòuo, who is elected every Year out of the Tradesmen of the Place to represent the Grievances of the People both to King, Council, and Chamber, and hath four of these Mistéres to attend him. Colhér, a Spoon, which are made Plural by the additional Syllable, es, v. g. Aluguéres, Mistéres, Colhéres.

It likewise is made Plural, by adding the same Syllable, es, both in Nouns Proper and Appellative, as in the first Ophir, Ophíres, Guadalquebir, Guadalquebíres; in the second, Mártyr, Mártýres, &c.

Or is expressed in Proper Names; as in Almançor, Thabór, Alvór, and in the Plural by the Addition of the same Syllable es; as Almançóres, Thabóres, Alvóres; so in Appellatives, Açór, an Hawk, Açóres; Bemfeitór, a Benefactor, Bemfeitóres; Caçadór, a Huntsman, Caçadóres; Lauradór, a Husbandman, Lauradóres.

Ur is a Syllable that terminates very few Words, either Proper or Common. The first as in Assúr, the second as in Carúr, a small Vessel at Sea, called Liburnum Lat. The Plural is made by the same Syllable es; as Assúres, Catúres.

Az terminates many common Names, as in the Singular Number; Alcatráz, a bone-setter; Arcáz, a trunk-maker; Beberráz, a Wine-bibber or drunkard; Belmáz, the Navel; Capitáz, the chief workman; Mangáz, a babbler; Maruáz, lean and contemptible; Rapáz, a Boy; Primáz, a Pimate; Roáz, a Detraçer. All which in the Plural end in ázes; as Alcatrázes, Arcázes, &c.

Ez determines several Words, both proper and common; the first, as Ingléz, an Englishman; Olandéz, a Dutch-

Dutchman; Braguéz, one of Braga; Milanéz, one of Millain, &c. The common are as follow; Pez, Pitch; Fez, Dregs; Torquéz, Tongues; Marquéz, a Marquess; Endéz, a Provocative egg; Arnéz, a Piece of Armour fitted for the Breast, or a Breast-plate; Conuéz, a ship's hatch or ship's deck; Mez, a Month; Reuéz, a Blow reversed. The Plural of these is made by the foresaid syllable *es*; as pézes, fézes, torquézes, &c.

Iz hath its proper Names, as Diniz, Denis; Luiz, Lewis, &c. and its Appellatives, v. g. Aboiz, a Vessel; Apprendiz, an Apprentice; Codorniz, a Quail; Chafariz, a Fountain of Water; Almojariz, a brazen Mortar; Raiz, a Root; Matriz, the Mother-Church; Verniz, Varnish; which are all made Plurals by the additional Syllables *es*; as Aboizes, Apprendizes, Codornizes, &c.

Oz terminates many common Names; as, Albernoz, a soldier's cassock or cloak; Cadóz, a place that resists not a ball; Arrióz, a stony Globe; Retróz, twisted silk; Arróz, Rice, which make their Plurals in the same form; as Albernozes, Cadózes, &c.

Uz is a Syllable that hath its proper Names; as Ormuz, of Ormus; Andalúz, one of Andalusia, a province in Spain. As also its Appellatives; as Aleatrúz, an earthen Vessel, with which, being many joined together, they draw Water for their Gardens in these parts; Abestrúz, an Ostridge; Arcabúz, a Gun or Musquet; Luz, Light. In the Plural they all end in *zes*, v. g. Ormuzes, Andalúzes, Alcatrúzes, Abestrúzes, Arcabúzes, and Lúzes.

This may be sufficient to have noted concerning Nouns Substantives, as to their Terminations, both in the Singular and Plural Number, meaning such as are regular.

It will be convenient to say something concerning the Terminations of Adjectives that have two forms, one related to the Masculine, the other to the Feminine Gender, commonly ending with the Letters *o* or *a*; v. g. Negro, Négra, Black; Alvo, Alva, White. Sometimes we meet

meet with an Exception, as in the word Bom, Bóo, Good. Adjectives regularly follow the Terminations of the Substantives to which they belong; but sometimes we find a Deviation, which shall be noted.

A. Great Numbers of Adjectives end in the Vowel, *a* serving for the Feminine Gender; as Virtuósa, Vertuous; Lín-da, Fair; En-gra-cá-da, Handsome; Dis-cré-ta, Discreet; Primorósa, Honourable or ingenious. They make their Plural, by adding the Letter *s*; as Virtuósas, Lín-das, &c.

The Numeral Adjectives also end in *a*, and wanting the Plural serve both Masculine and Feminine Gender; v. g. Quarénta, Forty; Cincoénta, Fifty; Sessénta, Sixty; Setténta, Seventy; Outénta, Eighty; Novénta, Ninety.

E. The Letter *e* also terminates Numbers of Adjectives in the Singular Number, having one form adapted to Substantives of both Genders, v. g. Gránde, Great; Brève, Short; Fórt-e, Strong; Eloquén-te, Eloquent. They make their Plurals by the Letters *s*; as Gránde-s, fórt-es, brève-s, &c. to which may be added the Numeral Adjectives that follow; Sé-te, Seven; Nô-ue, Nine; On-ze, Eleven; Dô-ze, Twelve; Trê-ze, Thirteen; Quatô-rze, Fourteen; Quin-ze, Fifteen; Desasé-te, Seventeen; Desanô-ue, Nineteen; Vín-te, Twenty; which serve only in the Plural Number to both Genders. Here also fall in the Pronouns *te* and *se*, serving both Singular and Plural. Also, Este, this; Elle, he or that; Esse, this; Aquélle, he or that; which make the plural by the Letter *s*; as Estes, these; Elles, they; Esses, aquéll-es.

I. This Vowel terminates no Adjective in the Portuguese Tongue, unless we introduce the Reciprocal Particle *Si*, which is the same in both Numbers, or the word Carmesi, Purple, but I think it is written more properly Carmesim.

O. This Vowel *o* ends great Numbers of Adjectives, which only serves for Substantives that are Masculine in the Singular, and observe their form in the Plural Num-

Number. Example; *Fermoso, Beautiful; Rico, Rich; Lindo, Fair.* The word *Sò* alone or only, when it is an *Adjective*, serves both *Genders*; as *Pedro está sò com Deos, Peter is alone with God; A Religiôsa está sò com Deos, the Nun is alone with God; and in the Plural Number* we say, *Os Religiôsos, e as Religiôsas estão sôs com Deos, the Monks and Nuns are alone with God.* Likewise these *Numeral Adjectives*, *Quatro, Four; Cinco, Five; Oito, Eight;* are joined with *Substantives*, both *Masculine* and *Feminine* in the *Plural Number* only.

U. Some *Adjectives* end in the Letter *u*, after the *Form* of the *Masculine-Gender*; v. g. *Nú, naked; Crú, raw; Meu, mine; Teu, thine; Séu, his.* Which in the *Plural* end in *us*; as *nús, crús, méus, téus, séus.* Only there is this *Difference* between the two former, *nú* and *crú*, and the latter *méu, teu, séu*; for in the former the *Vowel u* is perfect, and sufficient to make a *Syllable*, but in the latter join'd with *e*, melts into a *Diphthong*.

Adjectives ending in the forementioned *Consonants*, *l, m, r, s, z*, are conformable to the fore said *Substantives* and *Vowel*, as in the following *Examples*, *al, el, il, ol, ul;* in *al*, as *Principál, Chief; Gerál, General; Collateral, Collateral;* in *el*, as *Agradáuel, Agreeable; Affáuel, Affable; Abominável, Abominable;* in *il*, as *Gentil, Gentle;* *Sotíl, Subtle; Util, Profitable; Fácil, Easy.* In *ol*, as *Espanhól, a Spaniard; Regnól, one that lives in a Kingdom.* In *ul*, as *Azúl, Blem.* Where note, that all these in the *Plural* imitate the *Substantives* of the same *Terminations*.

The second sort are thus written; *am, em, im, om, um;* in *am*, as *Cám, a Dog; Chám, plain Ground; Peám, a Plebsyan.* In *em*, as *Alguém, some Body; Ninguém, no Body; Cem, a Hundred.* Which last being *Numeral*, hath no *Plural*, and serves both *Masculine* and *Feminine*. In *im*, as *Roim, Bad; Espadachim, a Sword-bearer.* In *om*, as *Bóm, Good;* in *um*, as *Hum, One; Algum, some Body; Nenhum, None;* Com-

Commum, Common. Which all in the Plural imitate the Substantives to which they belong. The four last have their Feminines in the Singular Number; as Huma, Alguma, Nenhuma, Commua; altho' some write not improperly Commum with a Feminine; as Opiniam Commum, a vulgar Opinion, &c. we also say, Deu hum ora, it hath struck One of the Clock; not for any Agreement between the Adjective and the Substantive, but because the former Vowel is cut off in the Pronunciation. This happens not when it is join'd with other Substantives, beginning with a Vowel, as it is improper to say, Cortoulhe hum orélha, He cut off one of his Ears.

As for this third Classis, ar, er, ir, or, ur, no Adjectives end in ir or ur, only in ar, er, or, e. g. Exemplar, Exemplary; Particular, Particular; Singular, Singular; Esmolér, Charitable; Melhor, Better; Peyór, Worse; Mayor, Greater; Menór, Lesser. In the Plural imitate their Substantives.

The fourth Classis, as, es, is, os, us, hath these following Examples; Duzentas, Trezentas, Ambas, Two Hundred, Three Hundred, both. In es, as Léstes, Préstes, Nimble, ready or forward. In is or y; as Séys, Six; Feliz, Happy; as some will have it, the Masculines are usual, as Duzentos, Trezentos, Ambos, Dous, &c. Seys admits of both Genders; as Seys touros, six Bulls; Seys vacas, six Cows; Ambos and Dous, only in the Plural Number for Masculines, Ambas and Dúas for Femines.

In the last Series, az, ez, iz, oz, uz, of this Combination of Vowels and Consonants in the Termination of Adjectives, we have the following Examples; in Az, as Primáz, a Primate; Mordáz, a biting Man or other Creature; Capáz, Capable; Efficáz, Effectual; Pertináz, Obstinate; Linguaráz, a Prattler. In e as follows; Portuguéz, a Portugeze; Francéz, a Frenchman; Irlandéz, an Irishman; Ingréz, an Englishman; Escocéz, a Scotchman; Olandéz, a Hollander; Genouéz, a Genoeze of Genoua; Treméz, of three Months acting or stand-

standing; Preytéz, Pretty; Cortéz, Courteous or civil; Dez, Ten; Tréz, Three. In iz, as follow, Bellíz, A-
cute; Felíz, Happy. In oz, as Feróz, Fierce, bar-
barous. In uz, as Trúz, Cruel. All which in the
Plural, observe their Substantives. VVe may note that
the Numerals Dez and Trez want the Plural Number,
and observe both Genders, as likewise do the following
Adjectives, Preytéz, Cortéz, Bellíz, Felíz, Velóz,
Swift; Feróz and Trúz.

Next in order follow the anomalous or irregular Nouns
us'd among the Portuguêze, as is already mentioned in
the Pronouns Eu, Tu, Si, admitting of Cases in the Sin-
gular, besides the common Regularity; as Mim, Ti,
Si.

First, Among the Irregulars are reckoned the Nume-
ral Adjectives; as Trinta, Thirty; Quarénta, Forty;
Cincoénta, Fifty; Sessénta, Sixty; Setténta, Seventy;
Oyténta, Eighty; Nouénta, Ninety; Cem, an Hun-
dred; which admits of no Plural Number, except the
VWord Dúzia, a Dozen; for it is proper to say, Húma
dúzia in the Singular, and Dúas ou trez dúzias in the
Plural. In like manner are usual, Hum, One; and
Huns, Some; Cénto, an Hundred; Céntos, Hun-
dreds; Cónto, a Thousand; Cóntos, Thousands;
Milham, milhoês, a Million and Millions. Neither is it
thought an Impropriety by some that are curious in this
Language, to admit of Plurals to all or most of the Nu-
meral Adjectives, e. g. Múytos vintes, múytos trin-
tas, múytos quaréntas, &c. as Dous vintes fazem
quarénta, Two Twenties or twice Twenty makes Forty;
and Dous trintas fazem sessénta, Twice Thirty make
Sixty, &c. Also in Arithmetick it is usual to say
Nôues fora, Cast away the Nines in the Plural.

Here note, That as some of these Numerals are esteem'd
irregular for want of the Plural, so others are such for
wanting the Singular Number; as Duzéntos, Trezén-
tos, Two Hundred, Three Hundred, &c. for Duzênto
and Trezênto which are not allowed.

The

The principal Nouns that in this Language are accounted irregular, are such as frequently occur in the Plural Number, but have a Singular Signification, as in the following Example; Láyvos, a fúgidade da cara, the Foulness of a Face; Grêlhas, a Gridiron; Cálças, Breeches; Migas, Sops; Pápas, Frumenty; Ceróulas, Drawers; Andás, a Carriage; Andílhas, a little Litter or Hammock; Cámaras, a Flux or Loosness; Alvícaras a Reward for good News; Páreas, a Tribute; Párias da parida, a Woman's afterbirth; Primícias, first Fruits; Arrás, Arras; Cócegas, Ticklishness; Cúttas, Expence; Editos, Edicts; Encóspas, a Form of Boots; Entránhas, Bowels; Exéquias, a Funeral; Erpes, St. Anthony's Fire; Lámpas, an Overplus; Tórneos é júttas, Tilts and Turnaments. All which, when they signify one single thing, are reputed Singular, altho' expressed by a Plural Termination, as is usual to say, os erpes, St. Anthony's Fire; as Lámpas, an Overplus.

There are likewise other irregular Words that have only a Singular Number; as Cál, white Lime; Sál, Salt; Péz, Pitch; Ar, Air; Doença, Sickness; and Ar, which is Gráça, a graceful Mine. There are also wanting Plurals to the following Nouns; as Pról, Profit; isto, isso, this; aquillo, that; quem, who; Alguém, some Body; Ninguém, no Body. And such as follow have no Singular; as Dous, Two; Tres, Three; Seys, Six; Ambos and ámbas, both.

There are likewise some Adverbs reputed anomalous; as Sim, so or yes; Nam, no; Lónge, far; Pértó, near; Póuco, little; Múyto, much; Lógo, presently; as for Example, Esta cidade tem múytos lónge, póucos pértos. This City is distant from many places, and hath very few near it; O póuco bástá ao moderádo, o múyto nam bástá ao pródigo, a little is sufficient for one that is moderate, a large Portion is not enough for a Prodigal; Os póucos repetidos fazem hum múyto, some few often repeated make a great deal; and os múytos podem ser tam diminuídos que escassamente façam hum

hum pouco, *many may be so diminished that they can hardly make up a small Quantity or Number.* Pédro no iobrescrito de suas cartas nam se contémta com de pôr hum logo, más põem tres logos, *Peter in the Superscription of his Letters is not content to put one Logo, or once presently; but three Logos, or three times presently.*

There are other Names that are either precedent, or else denote a Relation to a Country, or Family, or Fortune, or some other attendant Quality; as for Example, Dom Váscô de Gâma descobridôr da India; where Dom is the Prænoun, or first Name; Váscô the proper Name, Gâma relates to his Extraçtion or Family, and descobridôr da India points at his Fortune in that great and memorable Aëtion.

The Families in Portugal are numerous, and most of them without Signification, v. g. Souza, Bríto, Menézes, Távora, Magalhães, &c. Some there are that are derived from Plants; as Peréyra, a Pear-tree; Olivéyra, an Olive-tree; Noguéyra, a Wallnut-tree; Figueyra, a Fig-tree, &c. and others take their Names from Animals; as Sardinha, a Pilchard; Bacalháo, poor Jack; Cavállo, a Horse; Bezérro, a Calf; Touro, a Bull, &c.

Patronymicks are very numerous, such as either relate to Father, Mother or Country. Of the former may be the following Examples; Fernández, the Son of Ferdinand; Gonçálvez, the Son of Gonsalo, and so most of those that end in ez; as Rodríguez, Núnez, Vázquez, &c.

As to the latter relating either to some Town, City, Country, Nation or Province, are these and the like Examples, António Portuguêz, Anthony of Portugal; Francisco Arragonêz, Francis of Arragon; João Francêz, John a Frenchman; Pédro Ingrêz, Peter an Englishman; Christóvam Irlandêz, Christopher an Irishman.

The abovementioned being sufficient to explain the Nature and Variety of Nouns, Pronouns, and all other their
Parti-

Particles and Appendages; the next thing of most absolute use for the attaining a Perfection in this Language, is to be well acquainted with the Verbs and their Conjugations, which are declined thro' their several Moods and Tenses. And such are either Personal and Impersonal; Personal, that have all Three Persons in both Numbers; as Amo, I love; Amas, thou lovest; Ama, he loveth; Amámos, we love; Amays, ye love; Amam, they love; Cómo eu amáva, when I did love; Cómo tu amávas, when thou didst love; Cómo elle amáva, when he did love, &c. Impersonal, that admits of either first or second Person, nor hardly the third in the Plural, both in the Active and Passive Voice, v. g. Conuém, it is convenient; He lícito, it is lawful; Córrese, it is run; Peléjase, it is fought.

These Verbs are either Active, Passive or Neutral; the Verb Active Personal in all its Moods, Tenses and Persons, keeps its Signification without the Assistance of the Verb Substantive; Seu, I am; Es, thou art; he, he is; Example, Eu ámo, tu ámas, elle áma, I love, thou lovest, he loves; Eu léyo tu les, elle lé, I read, thou readest, he readerth, &c.

The Verb Personal Passive is what in all its Moods, Tenses and Persons, makes use of the Verb Substantive Sou, and the Participle of the Præterperfect Tense, keeping its own Signification, ex. g. Eu sou amádo, I am loved; Tu es amádo, thou art loved; Elle he Amádo, he is loved; Eu sou lido, I am read; Tu es lido, thou art read; Elle he lido, he is read.

The Verb Personal Neuter is such, that in all its Moods, Tenses and Persons, so keeps its Active Signification, that it admits of no Passive Signification by the help of the Verb Substantive, Sou, v. g. Embranquéço, I grow gray, Embranquéces, embranquéçe; Envelhéço, I grow old, envelhéces, envelhéçe; Endoudéço, I grow mad, endoudéces, endoudéçe.

All Verbs in this Language in the first Person, and Present Tense of the Indicative Mood and Singular Num-

ber, end in o; as *Eu ámo*, I love; *Eu embranquéço*, I grow gray; *Eu ouço*, I hear. Except *Sou* or *Estou*, I am; *Dou*, I give; *Vou*, I go; *Sey*, I know; *Ey*, I have. As also some Impersonals that end with other Letters, as in the Active Voice; *Empórta*, it imports; *Convein*, it is convenient; and in the Passive Voice, *Bébe*, it is drunk; *Corrése*, it is run.

The Moods of the Verbs are five, Indicative, Imperative, Optative, Conjunctive and Infinitive; the first is known by not having any precedent Particle; as *Amo*, I love; *Amáva*, I did love; *Améy*, I have loved; *Amára*, I had loved; *Amaréy*, I shall or will love; excepting the Perfect Future, as *ja entám eu teréy amádo*, I shall already then have loved.

The Imperative is known by its commanding Faculty; as *Ama tu*, love; *Amarás tu*, thou shalt love.

The Optative is distinguish'd by its wishing Particles; as *Oxalá*, would to God; *Quéira Déos*, God grant; *Práza a Déos*, *Prouvéra a Déos*, Pray God, &c. e. g. *Oxalá amára eu ou amásse*, would to God I did or had lov'd; *Prouvéra Déos que amára eu*, *práza Déos que áme eu*, God grant I may love.

The Conjunctive is known by the Particle *Cómo*; as *Cómo eu ámo*, when I love; *Cómo eu amáva*, When I did love.

The Infinitive by the Particle *Que*; as *Que ámo*, to love; *Que améy*, to have lov'd; or by the joining two Verbs; as *eu dezéjo amár ou ser amádo*, I desire to love, or to be lov'd.

All Verbs in their several Moods have three principal Tenses; viz. the Present, Preterperfect, and the Future; as *Amo*, I do love; *Eu améy*, I have loved; *Eu amaréy*, I will love: Besides three other subservient to them, viz. the Imperfect, the Preterpluperfect, and the Perfect Future; as *Eu amáva*, I did love; *Eu amára*, I had loved; *Ja entám eu teréy amádo*, I shall then already have lov'd.

All these six Tenses are only found in the Indicative, and in the Infinitive Mood; in the Imperative two only, viz. the Present and the Future; as *Ama tu*, love thou; and *Amarás tu*, thou shalt love. In the Optative, the Present and Imperfect are the same; as *Oxalá amára eu ou amásse*, would I did, might or could love; which will more fully appear by the several following Conjugations.

In these several Tenses every Verb hath three Persons in the Singular, and three in the Plural Number, viz. *Eu ámo*, I love; *Tu ámas*, thou lovest; *Elle áma*, he loveth; *Nos amámos*, we love; *Vos ámays*, ye love; *Elles ámam*, they love.

Where note, that the Portugueze use not the second Person Singular, *Tu*, thou; but in speaking to Persons very inferior, or very familiar, for speaking to Persons of Esteem from abroad, they use the second Person Plural; as *Vos soys*, and *Vos ámays*, You love, and you are, and not *Tu es*, thou art; *Tu ámas*, thou lovest.

The third Person of both Numbers serves for Titles and Persons of Quality and Dignity; as *Vossa mercê*, you or your Worship, you Sir, &c. *Vossa Reverendíssima*, peculiarly applied, to some superior Churchman; *Vossa senhoria*, your Lordship; *Vossa illustríssima*, Arch-bishops and Bishops, your most illustrious Lordship; *Vossa excellência*, your Excellence; *Vossa eminência*, your Eminence; *Vossa altêra*, your Highness; *Vossa Magestade*, your Majesty. For it would appear an insufferable piece of Rudeness to apply the ordinary third Persons to those that are invested with any Dignity or Quality, as to say *Ouça elle ou élla*, let him or her hear; or *Ouçam elles ou éllas*, let them hear; but we say more properly, *Ouçam vossas senhorias ou excellências*, will your Lordship, or Excellence, or Lordships, or Excellencies please to hear. Sometimes the second Person is us'd in directing a Discourse to such Persons of Quality, by joining the word *Senhór ou Senhóra*; as *Ouví senhores ou senhoras*, bark ye Sirs or Ladies.

Observe that in this Language the first and second Persons in both Numbers are sometimes expressed, and sometimes not as *Eu ámo & ámo, I love; Tu ámas & ámas, thou lovest; Nos amámos & amámos, we love; Vos ámays & ámays, ye love.* But the third Person is always expressed, as *Elle áma, he loves; Pedro áma, Peter loves; Elles lem, they read; Os homens lem, the Men read.* Except when the Verb in the Plural is made Neuter; as *Dízem, it is said; Contam, it is related; Reférem, it is reported.*

Observe likewise, that the Portuguese express the three Persons, *Eu, tu, elle, nos, vos, elles, by me, te, se, and nos, vos, se.* On which Occasion *nos* and *vos* want their usual Accent; as, *Nôs vôs, which is done two several ways.*

First, When we place these Particles *me, te, se, nos, vos, se, I, thou, he, we, ye, they,* before the Verb in the Accusative Case; as *Eu me envergonha, I am ashamed; Nós nos envergonhámos, we are ashamed; Vós vos envergonhays, ye are ashamed; Elles se envergonham, they are ashamed.*

Secondly, When the said Particles are placed after the Verb, v. g. *Envergonhome, I blush or am ashamed; Evergonhayvos, ye are ashamed; Envergonhamse, they are ashamed.* Which likewise appears in the words, *Córome ou eu me córo; I blush or colour; & Présome ou me présome, I brag or value my self.* And most Portuguese Verbs admit of the same Form, placing the said Particles either before or after it, v. g. *Eu me ámo, I love my self; Eu me ensino, I teach my self; Eu me ouço, I hear my self; Eu me louvo, I praise my self; Eu me conheço, I know my self.* So also when the said Particles follow the Verb; as *Amome, ensino me, ouço me, louvome, conhecome.*

Sometimes also the second Person Plural is expressed by the Addition of the Particle *des*; v. g. *Cómo fôrdes múyto témpo doente, nam me espantaréy, se vós vir fráco, If you should be sick long, I shall not wonder to see you weak.*

Before

Before we come to the Conjugations of regular Verbs, it will be convenient to say something of the Nature of the Verb *Sou* or *Estôu*, I am. Which tho' it be the most anomalous, and irregular of all others, yet it serves for an exact Direction to the Knowledge of all Passive Verbs, as being a constant Companion in all their Moods and Tenses.

Of this there are two Parts, the first, *Sou*, is an Attendant to all Verbs Passive, as will be seen in their Examples. The latter, *Estôu*, may be joined with all Verbs Active in all Moods and Tenses; as for instance, *Eu estôu lendo*, I am reading; *Eu estava fallando*, I was speaking; *Eu estive escrevendo*, I had been writing; *Eu estivera ensinando*, I have been teaching; *Eu estaréy ouvindo*, I will be hearing. Both which being irregular, belong to two distinct Conjugations; the first, *Sou*, I am, because of its Infinitive; *Ser*, to be, is the second Conjugation. The latter *Estôu*, because of its Infinitive *Estár* is of the first Conjugation.

This Verb is called Substantive for its Analogy with the Noun of that Name; for as the Noun Substantive can subsist of it self without an Adjective, but the Adjective not without it; so this Verb is significant of it self alone; but the Verb Passive is nothing without it, as will appear in common Discourse.

The Conjugation of *Sou* and *Estôu* as follow.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing. { *Eu sou, estôu*: I am.
 { *Tu es, estás*: Thou art
 { *Elle he, está*: He is.

C 4

Plur.

Plur. { Nos fomos, estamos: *We are.*
 Vos soys, estáys: *Ye are.*
 Elles são, estão: *They are.*

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu era, estava: *I was.*
 Tu eras, estavas: *Thou wast.*
 Elle era, estava: *He was.*
 Plur. { Nos éramos, estávamos: *We were.*
 Vos érys, estáveys: *Ye were.*
 Elles eram, estavam: *They were.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu fui, estive: *I have been.*
 Tu foste, estiveste: *Thou hast been.*
 Elle foy, esteve: *He hath been.*
 Plur. { Nos fomos, estivemos: *We have been.*
 Vos fostes, estivestes: *Ye have been.*
 Elles foram, estiveram: *They have been.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu fora, estivera: *I had been.*
 Tu foras, estiveras: *Thou hadst been.*
 Elle fora, estivera: *He had been.*
 Plur. { Nos fóramos, estivéramos: *We had been.*
 Vos fóreys, estivéreys: *Ye had been.*
 Elles fóram, estiveram: *They had been.*

The Imperfect Future.

Sing. { Eu feréy, estaréy: *I shall or will be.*
 Tu ferás, estarás: *Thou shalt or wilt be.*
 Elle será, estará: *He shall or will be.*
 Plur. { Nos ferémos, estarémos, *We, &c.*
 Vos feréys, estaréys: *Ye shall or will be.*
 Elles ferám, estarão: *They shall or will be.*

The

The Perfect Future.

Ja entám eu ferêy, estarêy: *I then shall already have been.*

Tu ferás, estarás:

Elle será, estará: *and,*

So as in the former Example of the Imperfect Future.

Imperative Present.

Se tu, está: *Be thou.*

Séja elle, estéja: *Let him let.*

Sejámos nos, estejámos: *Let us be.*

Séde vos, estáy: *Be ye.*

Séjam elles, estejam: *Let them be.*

The Imperative Future.

Serás tu, estarás: *Be thou.*

Será elle, estará: *He shall be.*

Serêys vos, estarêys: *Ye shall be.*

Serám elles, estarám: *Let them be, or they shall be.*

*Optative Mood.**Present and Imperfect Tense.*

Oxalá fóra eu ou fósse } *Would to God I were.*
estivéra ou estivésse:

Fóras tu ou fósses, } *Would to God thou wert.*
Estivéras ou estivésses:

Fóra elle ou fósse, } *He were.*
Estivéra ou estivésses:

Fóramos nós ou fósseamos, } *We were.*
Estivéramos ou estivéssamos:

Fóryes

Fôyes vós ou fôsseys, }
 Estivéreys, estivélleys : } *Ye were.*
 Fóram éllés ou fôssem, }
 Estivéram ou estivésssem : } *They were.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Quêyra Déos, que }
 Fôsse eu ou estivésse : } *God grant that I have been.*
 Fôsses tu, estivésses : } *Thou hast been.*
 Fôsse elle, estivésse : } *He hath been.*
 Fôssemos nós, ou }
 estivésssemos : } *We have been.*
 Fôsseys vós, ou }
 Estivésses. } *Ye have been.*
 Fôssem éllés ou }
 Estivésssem. } *They have been.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Prouvéra Déos que, }
 Fôra eu ou } *Would to God that I had been.*
 Estivéra eu }
 Fôras tu ou } *Thou hadst been.*
 Estivéras : }
 Fôra elle ou } *He had been.*
 Estivéra : }
 Fôramos nós ou } *We had been.*
 Estivéramos : }
 Fóram éllés ou } *Ye had been.*
 Estivéreys : }
 Fóram éllés ou } *They had been.*
 Estivéram :

Future Tense.

Práza a Déos que, }
 Séja eu ou } *Pray God that I may be.*
 Estéja :

Séjas tu ou	}	<i>Thou mayest be.</i>
Eltéjas :	}	
Séja elle ou	}	<i>He may be.</i>
Eltéja :	}	
Sejámos nós ou	}	<i>We may be.</i>
Estejámos :	}	
Séjays vós ou	}	<i>Ye may be.</i>
Eltéjays :	}	
Séjam elles ou	}	<i>They may be.</i>
Estejam :	}	

Conjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

Cómo eu sou, estóu	}	<i>When I am.</i>
ou sendo eu :	}	
Cómo tu es, estás	}	<i>When thou art.</i>
ou sendo tu :	}	
Cómo elle he, está	}	<i>When he is.</i>
ou sendo elle :	}	
Cómo nós somos,	}	<i>When we are.</i>
Estámos ou sendo nós :	}	
Cómo vós soys, estáys	}	<i>When ye are.</i>
ou sendo vós :	}	
Cómo elles sam, estám	}	<i>When they are.</i>
ou sendo elles :	}	

Preterimperfect Tense.

Cómo eu era, estava	}	<i>When I was.</i>
ou sendo eu :	}	
Cómo tu éras, estavas	}	<i>When thou wast.</i>
ou sendo tu :	}	
Cómo elle era, estava	}	<i>When he was.</i>
ou sendo elle :	}	

Cómo

Cómo nós éramos:	}	<i>When we were.</i>
estávamos ou sendo nós:		
Cómo vós éreys	}	<i>When ye were.</i>
Estáveys ou sendo vós:		
Cómo elles, eram	}	<i>When they were.</i>
Estavam ou sendo elles:		

Preterperfect Tense.

Cómo eu fúy ou	}	<i>When I have been.</i>
estive ou sendo eu:		
Cómo tu fôstes ou	}	<i>When thou hast been.</i>
Estiveste ou sendo tu:		
Cómo elle fôy, esteve	}	<i>When he hath been.</i>
ou sendo elle:		
Cómo nós fomos	}	<i>When we have been.</i>
Estivemos ou sendo nós:		
Cómo vós fôstes	}	<i>When ye have been.</i>
Estivestes ou sendo vós:		
Cómo elles foram	}	<i>When they have been.</i>
Estiveram ou sendo elles:		

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Cómo eu fôra	}	<i>When I had been.</i>
Estivêra, ou sendo eu:		
Cómo tu fôras, Estivê-	}	<i>When thou hadst been.</i>
ras ou sendo tu:		
Cómo elle fôra, ou	}	<i>When he had been.</i>
Estivêra, ou sendo elle:		
Cómo nós fôramos	}	<i>When he had been.</i>
Estivêramos ou sendo nós:		

Cómo

Cómo vós fóreys	}	<i>When ye had been.</i>
Estivéreys ou fendo vós:		
Cómo elles fóram	}	<i>When they had been.</i>
Estivéram ou feudo elles:		

Future Tense.

Cómo eu for ou	}	<i>When I shall be.</i>
Estivér:		
Cómo tu fóres	}	<i>When thou shalt be.</i>
ou Estivéres:		
Cómo elle fór:	}	<i>When he shall be.</i>
ou Estivér:		
Cómo nós fórmos	}	<i>When we shall be.</i>
ou Estivérmos:		
Cómo vós fórdes	}	<i>When ye shall be.</i>
ou Estivérdes:		
Cómo elles fórem	}	<i>When they shall be.</i>
ou Estivérem:		

Another Form of the Conjunctive Mood;
usual in this Language.

Present Tense.

Pósto que eu seja	}	<i>Altho' I am, or be.</i>
ou estéja:		
Tu sejas ou	}	<i>Thou art.</i>
Estéjas:		
Elle seja ou	}	<i>He be, or is.</i>
Estéja:		
Nós sejámos ou	}	<i>We be, or are.</i>
Estejámos:		

Vós

Vós sejas ou } *Ye be, or are.*
 Estéjays : }
 Elles sejam ou } *They be, or are.*
 Estéjam : }

Imperfect Tense.

Pósto que eu fóra, fósse, } *Altho' I were, or might be.*
 Estivéra, estivésse : }
 Tu fóras fósses, } *Thou wert, or mightest be.*
 Estivéras, estivésses : }
 Elle fóra fósse, } *He were, or might be.*
 Estivéra, estivésse : }
 Nós fóramos fóssemos } *We have been.*
 Estivéramos, estivéssemos : }
 Vos fóreis, fósseis } *Ye have been.*
 Estivéreis, estivésseis : }
 Elles fóram, fósem } *They have been.*
 Estivéram ou estivéssem :

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Pósto que eu fóra } *Tho' I had been.*
 ou Estivéra : }
 Tu fóras, Estivéras : *Thou hadst been.*
 Elle fóra, Estivéra : *He had been.*
 Nós fóramos ou Estivéramos : *We had been.*
 Vos fóreis, Estivéreis : *Ye had been.*
 Elles fóram ou Estivéram : *They had been.*

The Potential Mood hath the following
 Variety.

Present Tense.

Que seja ou esteja eu, que hey eu de ser ou estar seréy
 eu ou estaréy eu : *I may be.* Pre-

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sería ou estaria, fóra ou Estivéra, pudéra ser ou estár:
I might or could be.

Preterperfect Tense.

Púde eu ser ou estár: *I might or could have been.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Fóra eu ou estivéra, podéra ser ou estár: *I had been, or had been able to be.*

Future Tense.

Sería ou estaria eu, seréy ou estaréy eu, poderéy eu ser ou estár: *I shall or will be, or I shall or will be able to be.*

The Permissive or Commisive Mood.

Present Tense.

Séja ou estéja eu, do'ulhe que séja ou estéja, máisque séja ou estéja: *I grant that I may be, or altho' I am or may be.*

Imperfect Tense.

Fóra eu ou Estivéra, doulhe fóra, eu ou Estivéra, máisque fóra eu ou Estivéra: *I was or were, I grant that I was, altho' I was or were.*

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Que fôsse ou Estivêsse eu, doulhe que fôsse ou Estivêsse eu, másqe fôsse ou Estivêsse: *That I have been, I grant that I have been, altho' I have been.*

Preterpluperfect, as the Preterimperfect.

That I had been, I grant that I had been, altho' I had been.

Future Tense.

Doulhe que vénha ou chégue eu á ser ou estár: *I grant that I shall or will come to be, or may come to be.*

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sér and Estár: *To be sometimes expressed by que prefix'd in both Numbers through all the Tenses; v.g. que sou, es, he, somos, soys, sam; and so in estou, estás, &c.*

Preterimperfect Tense.

Ser and Estár: *To be que éra, éras, era, estáva, as, a, &c.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Que fuy, fôste, foy, estíve, estivêste, estêve, &c.
To have been.

Preter-

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Que fôra, fôras, fôra, estivêra, estivêras, estivêra: *To have had been.*

Future Tense.

Que ey, has, ha de ser, ou estarêy, estarás, estorá: *That I, thou, he, shall or will be, or must be, &c.*

Preterperfect Future Tense.

Que ouvêra as, a, de ser ou estár: *To have been.*
Ouvêramos, ouvêreys, ouvêram de ser ou estár: *To have been.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

O que ha, ou ouvêr de ser ou estár: *That which shall or will be, or come to pass.*

THE foregoing Examples being sufficient to acquaint us with the Variety and Manner of conjugating the Verb Substantive Sou or Estou thro' all its Moods and Tenses, it will not be improper nor unuseful to subjoin some Observations of peculiar Significance to its self, or else relating to the other Verbs, which are ordinarily discovered in common Discourse, and in reading the most elegant and polite Authors.

1. Note, The Verb Sou, I am, is exactly expressed and pronounced in the Preterperfect Tense as the Verb Vou, I go, by the word Eu fuy, &c. in both, Eu fuy, I have been; Eu fuy, I went; only with this Distinction, that the Preterperfect Tense of the Verb Vou, I go, is always followed by a Substantive of Place and Motion: As for Example; Fuy á Rôma, I went to Rome; Fuy á Londres,

dres, I went to London; and sometimes with an Adjective adjoined, as *Fuy á famosa Róma*, I went to famous Rome; *Fuy a gránde Lisbóa*, I went to great Lisbon. Sometimes follows a Verb of the Infinitive Mood; as *Fuy ver*, I went to see; *Fuy ler*, I went to read, &c. But the Preterperfect Tense of the Verb *Sou*, hath always a Substantive or Adjective following it without Motion, ex. g. *Fuy bom estudánte*, I have been a good Student; *Lisbóa foy fundáda por ulysses*, Lisbon was founded by Ulysses. The like Equipollence is found in the Preterpluperfects of the Indicative, and the Futures of the Conjunctive of the same Words, ex. g. *Eu fóra á Coimbra*, I had gone to Coimbra; *Eu fóra á Bristól*, I had gone to Bristow; *Eu fóra muyto rico*, I had been very fortunate: And so in the Future of the Conjunctive, *Cómo eu fór á O Pórtó*, When I shall go to O Porto; *Cómo eu fór á Cidáde de Dublin*, when I shall go to the City of Dublin; & *cómo eu fór tam esforçoso*, when I shall be so powerful; *Cómo eu fór descuydadoso*, when I am or shall be negligent or careless.

Besides these there are several other Examples of the same Nature; v. g. the third Person Plural of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood of the Verb *Sou*, *sam*, they are, is written and pronounced as the word *Sam*, which is well or sound.

In the same manner, *Era*, I or he was; & *Era*, an ivy-tree; *Eras*, thou wast; *Eras*, in the Plural, Ivy-trees. So *Eu & elle fóra*, I and he was or had been; and *fóra*, out or without; and *fóram*, they were or had been; and *forám*, a Ferret, distinguish'd only by the Accent. So *Serám elles*, they will be; and *Serám*, the beginning of the Night: So *Se tu*, with a Preposition, Sit thou; with a Pronoun *Se*; as *Agástase*, he is angry; and a Noun, as *Sé*, a See, or Metropolitan, or Cathedral Church; and *Séde vos*, sit thou or ye; and *Séde*, Thirst.

The same is used in two Persons of the Verb *Estou*, v. g. *Tu estás*, *elle está*, thou art, he is; express'd by the Noun

Noun Esta, *this*, in the Singular, and Estas, *these*, in the Plural Number, which are commonly distinguish'd either by the Accent, or the Connexion of the Discourse.

Note also, that all the Signs prefix'd to the Optative Mood, are such as express wishing or desiring; as Oxalá, Quéyra Déos, Prouvéra Déos, Práza á Déos, *Would to God, God grant, &c.* and O with Assim, and the like; as for Example, O se fósse eu tal, qual de mim se cúyda, *O that I were such as I am reputed to be; Assim Déos me ajúde, so help me God.* And the said Signs are observ'd very often to have the same Signification; v. g. Oxalá, quéyra Déos, prouvéra á Déos que fósse eu virtuoso, *would to God I were virtuous.*

The Conjunctive in this Language is the same with the Indicative, only distinguish'd by adding the Particle Côm, *when or as*; as appears by conjugating the Verb Sou; v. g. Côm soys bom parece vos que ninguém he máo, *when or as thou art good, thou thinks no Body to be bad; Côm eu éra innocente, de ninguém me temia, when or as I was innocent, I was afraid of no Body; Côm fôstes múyto témpo doente nam me espánto estárdes ainda fraco, since thou hast been a long time sick, I do not wonder that thou art yet weak; Côm dântes fóra soldádo sofria bém os trabalhos do mar, when or as formerly he had been a Soldier, he sufficiently endured the Toils of the Sea; Côm eu fór soldádo nam temeréy a morte, when I am or shall be a Soldier, I will not fear Death.*

Note also that the Portugeze not inelegantly make use of the Gerund Sendo and Estúndo, being in the Conjunctive Mood, ex. g. Nam vos coréys de fazer tays coufas sendo nóbre? *Do not you blush, or are you not ashamed to do such things, being a Person of Quality?* Nam vos está bem fallár tam livaemente sendo ainda móço, *it doth not convene or become you to talk so freely, being yet but a Youth: Apprendí Grégo. estando em Róma, I learned Greek when I was at Rome; Escriví vos diás cártas. estando em Lóndres, I wrote you tired*

Letters when I was in London ; Nam me espánto convaleçêrdes tam devagár, estando tanto tẽmpo doẽnte, I do not wonder that you recover so slowly, when you have been sick so long a time ; Cahí em húma doença nam sendo até entã doẽnte, I fell into a Distemper, when I had not till then been out of order.

Observe likewise that some Portuguese Verbs in the Conjunctive Mood are more elegantly expressed by the Particles Poys & despóys, than by Cõmo or the Gerund ; v. g. Nam me espánto fallárdes tam ousadamente, poys foys soldádo, I wonder not that thou talkest so boldly, because thou art a soldier. Morréo ao primẽiro de Setẽmbro despóys de ser Pápa sete ánnos, ou avẽdo sete ánnos que era Pápa, he died on the First of September after he had been Pope Seven Years.

There are yet remaining some other Idioms, peculiar to this Language in the Conjunctive Mood, as the fore-mentioned Põstoque eu sêja tu sêjas, altho' I may be, thou mayest be, &c. And the Particle Se, if ; & senám, if not ; as Se for, if I were or shall be ; Senám for, se fõres, se nam fõres, se fõsse senám fõsse, se fõra, se nam fõra, se fuy, senám fuy, &c.

In like manner there are other Particles adjoined, as que, that ; quenám, that not ; peraquẽ, why ; peraquẽ nam, why not ; aíndaque, although ; comtãtoque, whilst, or as long as ; ex. g. Agóra rogóte que sêjas liberal, antigamente rogávate que nam fõsses pródigo, I now desire thee to be liberal, I formerly desired thee not to be prodigal ; Empórta guardár cẽto méyo péra que sêjas liberal, e nam sêjas pródigo, it is necessary to keep a certain Medium, that thou mayest be liberal, and not prodigal ; Aínda que fõste pródigo, feréy teu amigo, com tãto que sêjas liberal, although thou hast been profuse, I will be thy Friend as long as thou art liberal ; Se fõres pródigo, é nam fõres liberal, perderás o que despendêste, if thou shouldst be profuse, and not liberal, thou wilt lose what thou hast spent. Where note, That the Particle Cõmo hath no Affinity with the Present Tense;

Tense; Séja, nor with the Imperfect, fósse, it being improper to say, Como eu séja, & como eu fósse, &c.

As to the Infinitive Mood of the Verb Sou, as well as of the rest, one word only expresses the Present and Imperfect Tense; as Ser, to be; Amar, to love; the rest of the Tenses are supplied out of the Indicative, with the Particle Que, and very often the Infinitive of the Verb Sou carries before it, or hath prefix'd to it the same Verb, or some other, ex. g. Dezejo ser virtuoso, I desire to be vertuous; He grande coisa ser virtuoso, it is a great matter to be vertuous; where the Infinitive is placed after the Verb. Sometimes the Verb is placed after the Infinitive; as Ser virtuoso he grande bem; to be vertuous is a great Blessing.

When the Idiom of the Infinitive Mood hath a Verb of the Present Tense affix'd to it, the Infinitive likewise speaks of the present time; as Dezejo ser virtuoso, I desire to be vertuous; but when the Antecedent Verb speaks of any other Tense, the Infinitive relates to the same, e. g. Dezejava, desejeý, dezejára, ser virtuoso, I did desire, I have desired, I had desired to be vertuous.

We always use the Present and Imperfect of the Infinitive after Verbs that signifie either Desire or Fear, ex. g. Posso, I can; Deuo, I owe; Gosto, I taste or relish; Começo, I begin; Determino, I am resolved; Costumo, I am used or accustomed; Quero, I will, love, or desire; Máys quero, I had rather; Nam quero, I will not, &c. but after other Verbs, both the Present and Imperfect Tenses of the Infinitive are supplied by the Indicative, by adding the Particle que; ex. g. Sey que sou ignorante, I know my self to be ignorant; Sabia que era ignorante, I know my self to be ignorant; Sey que fuy ignorante, I know my self to have been ignorant; Sabia que fóra ignorante, I know my self to have had been ignorant, or I did know that I was or had been ignorant.

Sometimes only the Particle Por, for, precedes the Verb in several Tenses; e. g. Por ser virtuoso me perséguem

os mãos ou perseguiam & perseguíram, *For my being virtuous, or because I am, was, and have been virtuous; they that are bad, do, did, and have persecuted me.*

The like use hath the Particle Sem, without, v. g. Sem ser letrado, dou, dáva, ou dey parecêres acertados, without being a Lawyer, I do, did give, and have given equal and just Advice.

And in another Form in the said Mood, as Sem que seja ou fosse letrado & sem ter Estudado dou parecêres, without being, or having been a Lawyer, or without having studied, I give in or offer my Opinion. And sometimes after the Particle á; as á ser o que dizêys, to be what you say; á fullár a verdáde, to speak the Truth,

The first Future of the Infinitive Mood is supplied by the Present Tense of the Verb ey, has, ha, I have, thou hast, he hath, or by the Future of the Indicative; v. g. Sey que avêys de ser homem douto, ou que serás homem douto, I know that thou shalt or wilt be a learned Man. If any Futures of the Infinitive Mood follow Verbs, either of promising, swearing or hoping, the said Futures are supplied by the Present Tense of the Infinitive. With an Addition of the Particle de, v. g. Promêto de ser fiel, I promise to be faithful; Juráva de ser fiel, I did swear to be faithful; and this may be expressed without the Particle de, and more elegantly.

The Potential and Permissive Moods are before explain'd by their Examples, only the Future of the Potential is alter'd somewhat in the following Form, ja que assim he, se embóra, fáze o que quizêres, since it is so, so let it be, do what thou wilt.

*Of the General and Auxiliary Verbs,
Ey, has, ha; Ténho, tens, tem;
I have, thou hast, he hath.*

These Verbs are reputed General as well as the precedent, and the first hath this peculiar Property, that it

is a Companion to all Verbs thro' the Moods and Tenses in both Active and Passive Voice; the second accompanies all Verbs in the Active, but not in all Tenses, as in the following Examples.

The Form of Conjugating the Auxiliary Verb Ey, has, ha.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Eu ey : *I have.*

Tu has : *Thou hast.*

Elle ha : *He hath.*

Nôs hémos, avémos : *We have.*

Vôs eys, avéys : *Ye have.*

Elles ham : *They have.*

Imperfect Tense.

Eu avia : *I had.*

Tu avias : *Thou hadst.*

Elle avia : *He had.*

Nôs avíamos : *We had.*

Vôs avíeys : *Ye had.*

Elles aviam : *They had.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Eu ouve : *I have had.*

Tu ouvêste : *Thou hast had.*

Elle ouve : *He hath had.*

Nôs ouvêmos : *We have had.*

Vôs ouvêstes : *Ye have had.*

Elles ouvêram : *They have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tense,

Eu ouvéra : *I had had.*
 Tu ouvéras : *Thou hadst had.*
 Elle ouvéra : *He had had.*
 Nós ouvéramos : *We had had.*
 Vós ouvéreys : *Ye had had.*
 Elles ouvéram : *They had had.*

Future imperfect Tense.

Eu averéy : *I shall or will have.*
 Tu averás : *Thou, &c.*
 Elle averá : *He.*
 Nós averémos : *We.*
 Vós averéys : *Ye.*
 Elles averám : *They shall or will have.*

Future Perfect Tense.

Ja entám.

Eu teréy aído : *I shall then have had.*
 Tu terás : *Thou shalt.*
 Elle terá : *He shall.*
 Nós terémos : *We shall.*
 Vós teréys : *Ye shall.*
 Elles terám : *They shall.*

The Uncertain Tense.

Eu avería.
 Tu averías.
 Elle avería.
 Nós averíamos.
 Vós averíays.
 Elles averíam.

I might have.
Thou mightest have, &c.
The use of this Tense depends
upon Variety of Reading and Con-
versation.

Imperative

Imperative Present.

Ajas ou ha tu : *Have thou.*
 Aja elle : *Let him have,*
 Ajámos nós : *Let us have,*
 Ajáys, avéy vós : *Have ye or you.*
 Ajam elles : *Let them have.*

Future, or the Mandatine Mood.

Avarás tu : *Thou shalt have.*
 Avará elle : *He shall have.*
 Avarémos nós : *We shall have.*
 Avaréys Vós : *Ye shall have.*
 Averám elles : *They shall have.*

Optative Present.

Oxalá ouvéra eu :	$\left. \begin{array}{c} \text{Would to God} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>I had.</i>
Ouvéras tu :		<i>Thou hadst.</i>
Ouvéra elle :		<i>He had.</i>
Ouvéramos nós :		<i>We had.</i>
Ouvéreys vós :		<i>Ye had.</i>
Ouvéram elles :		<i>They had.</i>

Imperfect Tense.

Oxalá ouvéffe eu :	$\left. \begin{array}{c} \text{Would to God I had,} \\ \text{and as above.} \end{array} \right\}$
Ouvéffes tu :	
Ouvéffe elle :	
Ouvéffemos nós :	
Ouvéffey vós :	
Ouvéffem elles :	

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

		Quéyra Déos que.
Ouvéſſe eu :	} God grant	I have had.
Ouvéſſes tu :		Thou haſt had.
Ouvéſſes elle :		He hath had.
Ouvéſſemos nôs :		We have had.
Ouvéſſes vôs :		Ye have had.
Ouvéſſem elles :		They have had.

Preterpluperfect Tense.

		Prouvéra á Déos que.
Ouvéra eu :	} Would to God	I had had.
Ouvéras tu :		Thou hadſt had.
Ouvéra elle :		He had had.
Ouvéramos nôs :		We had had.
Ouvéreys vôs :		Ye had had.
Ouvéram elles :		They had had.

The ſame with the Preſent.

Future Tense.

Práza á Déos que :	God grant that.	
Aja eu :	} God grant that	I have or may have.
Ajas tu :		Thou have.
Aja elle :		He have.
Ajámos nôs :		We have.
Ajáys vôs :		Ye have.
Ajám elles :		They have.

Conjunctive Mood.

Preſent Tense.

Cómo eu ey ou avéndo eu :	} As I have, or I having.
------------------------------	---------------------------

Tu has: *Thou hast.*

Elle ha: *He hath.*

Nos hémos ou } *We have.*
avémos: }

Vos heys, avéys: *Ye have.*

Elles ham: *They have.*

And so thro' all the Tenses as in the Indicative, except the Future; as,

Cómo eu avía: *When I had.*

Cóino eu ouve: *When I have had.*

Cómo eu ouvéra: *When I had had.*

The Future thus:

Cómo eu ouvér: *When I shall have.*

Tu ouvères: *Thou shalt have.*

Elle ouvér: *He shall have.*

Nôs ouvérmos: *We shall have.*

Vôs ouvérdes: *Ye shall have.*

Elles ouvérem: *They shall have.*

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Avér, *to have*; ou que ey, has, ha, avémos, avéys, ham, &c.

Imperfect Tense.

Avér, *to have*; ou que avía, aviás, avía, avíamos, aviays, avíam.

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter avído, *to have had*; ou que Ouve, ouvêste, ouve, ouvémós, ouvêstes, ouvéram.

Preter-

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Ter avído, *to have had* ; ou que ouvéra, as, a, mos, ouvéreys, ouvéram.

Future Tense.

Que averéy, averás, á, ou que ey, has ha de avér ; *to have, or that I, thou, he, shall have: And so in the Plural, que averémos, averéys, averám, ou que avémos ou hémos, eys ou avéys & ham de avér.*

Participle Present.

Em avér, *in having* ; avéndo, *having* ; and téndo avído, *having had.*

Participle Preterimperfect.

Avído & avída, *had.*

Gerund.

De avér, *of having* ; **Por avér,** *to have.*

Observe,

That these Auxiliary Verbs, (as such) of themselves generally signifie nothing, being invented only to assist others, but in some Cases they are significant of themselves, as Examples will declare.

Note also, That the Verb Ey, has, ha, I have, thou hast, be hath, assists all sorts of Verbs in their Moods, Tenses and Persons, both in the Active and Passive Signification. In the Active, by adding the Particle de to the Present Tense of the Infinitive of the Verbs ; Example, Ey de amár, I am about to love, or shall love ; Ey de ler, ouvir,

ouvir, *I am about to, or shall read or hear, &c. and so in the other Persons and Tenses.*

In the Passive Signification are added to the Particle de the Present Tense of the Infinitive of Ser, and the Participle of the Preterperfect Tense of any Verb; as Ey de ser amado, *I shall or will be lov'd; has de ser ouvido, Thou shalt or wilt be heard; ha de ser lido, be, or it shall or will be read.*

Next in order follows the Conjugation of the Verb Ténho in the same manner as the former; v. g.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Eu tenho: *I have.*

Tu tens: *Thou hast.*

Elle tem: *He hath.*

Nôs temos: *We have.*

Vós tendes: *You have.*

Elles tem: *They have.*

Imperfect Tense.

Eu tinha, *I had.*

Tu tinhas: *Thou hadst.*

Elle tinha: *He had.*

Nôs tínhamos: *We had.*

Vós tínheys: *You had.*

Elles tínham: *They had.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Eu tive: *I have had.*

Tu tiveste: *Thou hast had.*

Elle teve: *He hath had.*

Nôs

Nôs tivêmos: *We have had.*
 Vôs tivêstes: *Ye have had.*
 Elles tivêram: *They have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Eu tivêra: *I had had.*
 Tu tivêras: *Thou hadst had.*
 Elle tivêra: *He had had.*
 Nôs tivêramos: *We had had.*
 Vôs tivêreys: *Ye had had.*
 Elles tivêram: *They had had.*

Imperative Future.

Eu teréy: *I shall or will have.*
 Tu terás: *Thou shalt or wilt have.*
 Elle terá: *He shall or will have.*
 Nôs terêmos: *We shall or will have.*
 Vôs teréys: *Ye shall or will have.*
 Ellés terám: *They shall or will have.*

Perfect Future.

Ja eu entám teréy tído: *I shall then already have had.*
 Tu terás tído: *Thou shalt then already have had.*
 Elle terá tído: *He shall then already have had.*
 Nôs terêmos tído: *We shall then already have had.*
 Vôs teréys tído: *Ye shall then already have had.*
 Elles terám tído: *They shall then already have had.*

The Uncertain Tense.

Eu tería: *I might have.*
 Tu terías: *Thou might'st have.*
 Elle tería: *He might have.*
 Nôs teríamos: *We might have.*
 Vôs terieys: *Ye might have.*
 Elles teríam: *They might have.*

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Present Tense.

Tem ou ténhas tu: *Have thou.*

Ténha elle: *Let him have.*

Tenhâmos nós: *Let us have.*

Ténde ou tenháys vós: *Have ye.*

Ténham elles: *Let them have.*

The Future or Mandative Tense.

Terás tu: *Thou shalt have.*

Terá elle: *He shall have.*

Terêmos nós: *We shall have.*

Teréys vós: *Ye shall have.*

Terám elles: *They shall or will have.*

Optative Mood.

Present Tense.

Oxalá tivéra eu: *Would to God I had.*

Tivéras tu: *Would to God thou hadst.*

Tivera elle: *Would to God he had.*

Tivéramos nós: *Would to God we had.*

Tivéreys vós: *Would to God ye had.*

Tivéram elles: *Would to God they had.*

Imperfect Tense.

Oxalá tivéſſe eu: *Would to God I had.*

Tivéſſes tu: *Would to God thou had.*

Tivéſſe elle: *Would to God he had.*

Tivéſſe-

Tivéssemos nós : *Would to God we had.*

Tivésseys vós : *Would to God ye had.*

Tivéssem elles : *Would to God they had.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Quêyra Déos que ténha eu ou tivésse eu : *God grant I have or may have.*

Que ténhas ou tivésse tu : *God grant thou have or may have.*

Que ténha ou tivésse eu : *God grant that he have or may have.*

Que tenhamos nós ou tivéssomos : *God grant we have or may have.*

Que ténhays vós ou tivésseys : *God grant ye have or may have.*

Que tenham elles ou tivéssem : *God grant that they have or may have.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Prouvéra Déos que tivéra eu ou tivésse : *Would to God I had had.*

Tivéras ou tivésse tu : *Would to God thou hadst had.*

Tivéra ou tivésse elle : *Would to God he had had.*

Tivéramos ou tivéssomos nós : *Would to God we had had.*

Tivéreys ou tivésse vós : *Would to God ye had had.*

Tivéram ou tivéssem elles : *Would to God they had had.*

Future Tense.

Práza á Déos que ténha eu : *May it please God that I may have.*

Que ténhas tu : *May it please God that thou may have.*

Que ténha elle : *May it please God that he may have.*

Que tenhamos nós : *May it please God that we may have.*

Que

Que ténhays vós : *May it please God that ye may have.*
 Que ténham elles : *May it please God that they may have.*

Conjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

Cómo eu ténho : *When, or as I have.*
 Cómo tu tens : *When thou hast.*
 Cómo elle tem : *When he hath.*
 Cómo nós temos : *When we have.*
 Cómo vós tendes : *When ye have.*
 Cómo elles tem : *When they have.*

Imperfect Tense.

Cómo eu tinha : *When, or as I had.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Cómo eu tive : *When, or as I have.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Cómo eu tivéra ou tivésse : *When, or as I had had.*

Future Tense.

Cómo eu tiver : *When, or as I shall have.*
 Cómo tu tivéres : *When thou shall have.*
 Cómo elle tiver : *When he shall have.*
 Cómo nós tivérmos : *When we shall have.*
 Cómo vós tivérdes : *When ye shall have.*
 Cómo elles tiverem : *When they shall have.*

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ter, *to have* ; ou que tenho, que tens, que tem, &c.

Imperfect Tense.

Ter, *to have* ; ou que tinha, que tinhas, que tinha, &c.

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter tido, *to have had* ; ou que tive, tiveste, teve, &c.

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Ter tido, *to have had* ; ou que tivéra, tivéras, tivera, &c.

Future Imperfect.

Que teréy : *That I shall or will have.*
 Que terás,
 Que terá, ou
 Que ey, has, ha de ter, ou
 Que terémos, teréys, terám, ou
 Que avémos, avéys, ham d: ter.

Future Preterperfect.

Que ouvéra, ouvéras, ouvéra, ouvéramos, ouvéreys,
 ouvéram de ter : *That I, thou, he, we, ye, they have had.*

Participle Present.

Em ter, *in having* ; téndo, *having* ; ou téndo tido,
having had. Parti.

*Participle Preterperfect.*Tído ou tída : *Had.**Gerund.*De ter ou pára ter : *To have.*

Note, That this Verb *Ténho*, tens, tem, is Auxiliary to other Verbs thro' all its Moods and Tenses, only in an Active Signification, with the Addition of a Participle Preterperfect Tense of the said Verb; as *Ténho amádo*, I have loved; Tens, tem, amádo, lído, Loved, Read; Ouvído, Heard; *Tinha*, I had; *Tinhas*, tinha, amádo, lído, ouvído, &c.

Observe also that these three Auxiliary Verbs *Sou*, I am; *Ey* and *Ténho*, I have, are often Auxiliary to one another; as for Example, *Ey de ser*, I shall be; *Ténho sido*, I have been; *Ténho avído*, I have had. Sometimes the same Verb is Auxiliary to it self; as *Ey de avér*, I shall have; *Ténho tído*, I have had, &c.

Here follow some other Observations relating to the same Verbs, which ought not to be omitted.

First, Take notice of the Irregularities of the Verb *Ey*, I have; that in the second and third Persons Singular, and the third Plural of the Indicative and Infinitive Moods it is express'd with an Aspiration, in the others not as *Tu has*, thou hast; *Elle ha*, he hath; *Elles ham*, they have. Among the rest it hath one Irregularity peculiar to its self, and not to be found in other Verbs; that is, that in all Moods, Tenses and Persons of the Singular Number, it serves Nouns both Singular and Plural, ex.g. *Ha hum áнно*, it is a Year; *Ha múytos ánnos*, it is many Years: So *Avía hum áнно & múytos ánnos*, it

was one Year, and many Years ; Ouve hum áнно, and mýtos ánnos, it hath been one and many Years ; and in the same manner, Ha, avia, óuve nesta terra hum hómem ou mýtos hómens, there is, was, or hath been in this Country, a Man, or many Men.

The second Observation is, that in all Moods, Tenses and Persons, this Verb is made use of with the Addition of the Particle de, with the Present and Imperfect of the Verb Substantive Sou and Estôu : Example, Ey de sér, amár, lér, I shall be, love, read ; Avia de sér, amár, lér, & óuve de sér, amár, lér ; the Plural, Avêmos, avêys, ham de sér, amár, ler, &c. The Verb Têno in this Form is improper, altho' elegant enough in the Spanish ; for we do not say, Têno de amár, ler, escrever ; altho' the Spaniards say properly enough, têngo de amár, ler, escribir.

Note also that sometimes the Particle me is added, and must always be placed before the Particle de, as ha me de dar, He shall give me ; Ha me de custar cáro, it shall or will cost me dear ; it being impolite to say, Ha de me dar, ha de me custar, &c.

The third Observation is, That we often make use of the Verb Ey, with the Particle de, and the Infinitive of the Verb Substantive, Sou, that is, Ser, join'd with the Participle Preterperfect of any Verb in the Passive Voice ; ex. g. Ey de sér amádo, I shall be loved ; Ey de sér ouvido, and lido, heard and read. So avia, and óuve de sér amádo, lido and ouvido. And so thro' all the Numbers and Persons.

Note, That the Verb Ey in the Passive Voice is always put before the Infinitive Ser, as Ey de sér, avia de sér, &c. but in the Active Voice it is not only put before the Verb to which it is joined, but sometimes after. Example, Se me fizêdes a vontade, deyxar vos ey por méu erdeyro, if you please me I will make you my Heir ; Se fôrdes obediênte á vóssos pays, fârvos ha Déos mýttas mercês, if you are obedient to your Parents God will bless you.

Note,

Note, That the Verb *Ténho*; I have; is often join'd with Verbs Active and Nenters, not in all the Tenses, only the Preterperfect, Preterpluperfect of the Indicative, Optative, Conjunctive and Infinitive Moods; as also in the Futures Perfect of the Indicative and Conjunctive. Examples, *Ténho amado*; I have lov'd; *Tivera amado*, I had lov'd; *Prouvêra á Deos que tivera eu amado*, Would to God I had loved. *Cómo eu tenho amado*, when I have loved; *ou tendo amado*, having lov'd; *Cómo eu tinha amado*, when I had loved; & *tendo amado*, &c. *Ter amado*, to have lov'd; *Eu terêy amado*, I shall have lov'd; *Cómo eu tiver amado*, when I shall have lov'd.

Observe likewise, that the Verb *Ténho* is not always well joined with all Participles of Verbs of the Active Voice; for it would be improper to say, *Ténho, pedido*, I have been able; *Ténho querido*, I have desired; *Ténho rido*, I have laugh'd; *Ténho aborrecido*, I have abhorred; because the Verb *Ténho* admits not the Signification of all Verbs, of which Experience will be the best Informer.

Note also, that the Verbs which admit not the Auxiliary Verb *Ténho*; are generally of the second or third Conjugation, and those rare. It is join'd with all of the first Conjugation, excepting the Verb *Matár*, to kill; for it would be improper to say, *Ténho matado*, but rather *Ténho morto*, I have killed.

Take notice, that the Verb *Ouve* being the third Person Present Tense of the Indicative from the word *Ouçó*, I hear; is the same with *Oúve*, there hath been; the third Person Preterperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood of *Ey*, I have; for which, Reading and Conversation will give the best Instructions; as also in the Verb *Ténho*, the Imperfect Tense *Tinha*, I had, is exactly express'd, as the word *Tinha*, which signifies a Disease; all which are only discoverable by Experience.

Only take notice, that the third Person Singular and Plural of the Indicative Mood, Present Tense, from the Verb *Ténho*, is express'd after the same manner, as from

the word *Pônhô*, I put; as for Example, we say, *Elle tem*, he hath; *Ellos tem*, they have; so *Elle pôem*, he puts; & *elles pôem*, they put. The like Equivocation is found in the first and third Persons Singular of the Imperfect and Preterpluperfect Tense, viz. *Eu éra*, I was; *Elle éra*, he was; *Eu fóra*, I was or had been; *Elle fóra*, he was or had been; *Eu tinha*, I had; *Elle tinha*, he had; *eu tivéra*, I had; *Elle tivéra*, he had, &c. but for the third Person Singular and Plural to accord is only to be observ'd in the two forementioned Verbs and their Compounds; as *tem* and *pôem*, they have, they put: So *retém*, he or they retain; *Detém*, he or they detain; *Com pôem*, he or they compose or compound; *Dispõem*, he or they dispose. As also *Vem* from *Vênho*, he or they come.

In the next place follow the Conjugations, to which all Verbs in the Portuguese Language are reduced.

Of these Verbs there are three Orders distinguish'd by the Termination of the second Person of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, and the Present of the Infinitive.

The first terminates in *as* & *ar*, viz. *Amo*, I love; *Amas*, thou lovest; *Amár*, to love; *Ensino*, I teach; *Ensinas*, thou teachest; *Ensinár*, to teach; *Louvo*, I praise; *Louvas*, thou praisest; *Louva*, he praiseth; *Louvár*, to praise.

The second Conjugation is of Verbs, that in the second Person Present Indicative end in *es*, and in the Infinitive in *er*, viz. *Léyo*, I read; *Les*, thou readest; *Ler*, to read; *Conheço*, I know; *Conheces*, thou knowest; *Conhecét*, to know; *Escrevo*, I write; *Escreves*, thou writest; *Escrevér*, to write.

The third Order or Conjugation is of Verbs that terminate the second in *es*, but in the Infinitive end in *ir*; v. g. *Oúço*, I hear; *Oúves*, thou hearest; *Ouvir*, to hear; *Fínjo*, I feign; *Fínges*, thou feignest; *Fingir*, to feign; *Abro*, I open; *Abres*, thou openest; *Abrir*, to open.

To these three Classes all Verbs in this Language are reduced; and those that are irregular are referred to some one of them, altho' with some Variety as to Tense and Person, as will hereafter appear.

The

The first Conjugation is most easily distinguished by its two Terminations in *ás* and *ár*, but the two latter are known with more Difficulty, because their two first Terminations are the same in *es*, the latter in *ex* and *ir*; but as to this, Use and Observation will give the best Information.

The first Conjugation is so regular, that it keeps the same Characters thro' all the Moods and Tenses, changing only the Letter *O* into such Letters as the several Tenses are terminated in; ex. g. *Amo*, I love; *Amáva*, I did love; *Amé*, I have loved; *Louvo*, I praise; *Louváva*, I did praise; *Louvéy*, I have praised. Here occurs an Exception in the Verb *Dou*, I give, which in the rest of the Tenses loseth its two last Letters *ou*, ex. g. *Dou*, I give; *Dáva*, I did give; *Déy*, I have given; as also such Verbs as end in *co*; as *Fico*, I remain; *Finco*, I fasten; *Brinco*, I play; *Arranco*, I root up; *Tróco*, I truck or change; *Rónco*, I snore; *Píco*, I prick; which in all the other Tenses change only the Letter *o*, but in the Preterperfect Tense change also the Letter *c* into *q*; ex. g. *Finquéy*, I have fastned; *Fiquéy*, I have remained; *Brinquéy*, I have play'd; *Arranquéy*, *ronquéy*, *Piquéy*, &c.

Besides, it is remarkable that Verbs of the second and third order seldom equivocate with Nouns writ and express'd with the same Letters, as in the second Conjugation, *Córró*, I run; *Cómo*, I eat; *Sóruo*, I swallow; and in the third, as *Sáyo*, I go out; *Río*, I laugh; which tho' they equivocate in the first Person Present if the Indicative Mood, and Singular Number with such Nouns so express'd, yet are altogether different in other Persons.

But you may observe, that in Verbs of the first Conjugation in the Present Tense Indicative Mood, the first, second and third Persons of the Singular Number are written and express'd with the very same Letters without any Difference; and their Signification is only to be guessed at by the Connexion of the Matter discours'd of.

Verbs of the first Conjugation equivocate Three Ways with Nouns express'd in the same Form.

First, *When the Verb and Noun is express'd with the same Letters in the said Present Tense; as for Example, Agóuto, I divine or foretel; and Agóuro, Divination; Abráço, I embrace; and Abráço, an Embrace; Cânto, I sing; and Cânto, a Song; Chóro, I cry; and Chóro, a crying. So Desprézo, I contemn, and Desprézo, a Contempt; Desejo, I desire, and Desejo, a Desire or Longing; Comêço, I begin, and Comêço, a Beginning; Ensino, I teach, and Ensino, a teaching; Furto, I steal, and Furto, a Stealtb; Fécho, I shut, and Fécho, a Shutter; Bérrro, I bray or bellow, and Bérrro, a braying or bellowing; Lívro, I free; and Lívro, a Book; Róubo, I rob, and Róubo, a Theft; ólho, I see, and ólho, an Eye; Rógo, I desire, and Rógo, a Desire; Soluço, I sob or sigh, and Soluço, a Sigh, &c.*

In the second and third Person Singular of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, Verbs are very numerous that are Equipollent, writ and express'd like Nouns. Examples, Brigas tu, élle bríga, thou fightest, be fightest, and are at the same time Nouns; as Bríga, a Fight or Quarrel, and Brígas, Fights or Quarrels: So Bulca, Búlcas, Cúlpa, Cúlpas, and a vast Number more which will be discover'd by Observation and Vocabularies.

Verbs likewise are very numerous, which in the first Conjugation and the Present Indicative, equivocate with Nouns in all the Three Persons of the Singular, and the third Person Plural; v. g. Amo, I love, Amas, thou lovest; Ama, he loves; and at the same time Amo signifies a Master of a House or Family; and Amas, áma, either a Mistress or Nurse of Children, or Mistresses or Nurses. So Ameáço, ameáças, ameáça; Bárro, bárras, bárra, &c. So in the third Person Plural; Arrépellam, they pull off or out the Hairs, and Arrepelám, a pulling out, or cutting off the Hair; and so in many other Words, of which Use must be the Informer, and which I here omit to avoid Tedioufness.

Next

Next in order follow the Three Classes or Series of Conjugations of all regular Verbs in this Language; and the first in order is the Active Voice of the Verb Amo, I love, thro' all its Moods and Tenses, viz.

First Conjugation.

Present Tense Indicative.

Eu ámo: *I love.*

Tu ámas: *Thou lovest.*

Elle áma: *He loveth.*

Nôs amámos: *We love.*

Vôs ámays: *Ye love.*

Elles ámam: *They love.*

Imperfect Tense.

Eu amáva: *I did love.*

Tu amávas: *Thou didst love.*

Elle amáva: *He did love.*

Nôs amávamos: *We did love.*

Vôs amáveys: *Ye did love.*

Elles amávam: *They did love.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Eu améy ou ténho amádo: *I have loved.*

Tu amáste ou tens amádo: *Thou hast loved.*

Elle amou ou tem amádo: *He hath loved.*

Nôs amémos ou témos amádo: *We have loved.*

Vôs amástes ou téndes amádo: *Ye have loved.*

Elles amáram ou tem amádo: *They have loved.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Eu amára ou tinha amádo: *I had loved.*

Eu

Tu amáras ou tinhas amado: *Thou hadst loved.*
 Elle amára ou tinha amado: *He had loved.*
 Nós amáramos ou tínhamos amado: *We had loved.*
 Vós amáreys ou tínheys amado: *Ye had lov. d.*
 Elles amáram ou tínham amado: *They have loved.*

Future Imperfect.

Eu amaréy: *I shall or will love.*
 Tu amarás: *Thou shalt or wilt love.*
 Elle amará: *He shall or will love.*
 Nós amarémos: *We shall or will love.*
 Vós amaréys: *Ye shall or will love.*
 Elles amarám: *They shall or will love.*

Future Perfect.

Ja eu entam teréy amado: *I shall then have loved.*
 Tu terás amado: *Thou shalt have loved.*
 Elle terá amado: *He shall have loved.*
 Nós terémos amado: *We shall have loved.*
 Vós teréys amado: *Ye shall have loved.*
 Elles terám amado: *They shall have loved.*

Imperative Mood Present.

Ama tu: *Love thou.*
 Ame elle: *Let him love.*
 Amémos nós: *Let us love.*
 Amáy vós: *Love ye.*
 Amem elles: *Let them love.*

Future or Mandative Mood.

Amarás tu: *Thou shalt love.*
 Amará elle: *He shall love.*

Ama-

Amaréys vós: *Ye shall love.*
 Amarám elles: *They shall love.*

Optative Mood.

Present and Imperfect Tense.

Oxalá amára eu ou amásse: *Would I might or could love.*
 Amáras tu ou amásse: *Would thou might'st or could'st love.*

Amára elle ou amásse: *Would he might or could love.*

Amáramos nós ou amássemos: *Would we might or could love.*

Amaréys vós ou amásseys: *Would ye might or could love.*

Amarám elles ou amássem: *Would they might or could love.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Quéyra Déos que ténha eu amádo: *God grant that I may have lov'd.*

Que ténhas tu amádo: *That thou may'st have lov'd.*

Que ténha elle amádo: *That he may have lov'd.*

Que ténhamos nós amádo: *That we may have lov'd.*

Que ténhays vós amádo: *That ye may have lov'd.*

Que ténham elles amádo: *That they may have lov'd.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Prouvéra Déos que Amára eu ou tivéra-amádo: *Would to God that I had loved.*

Que amáras tu: *That thou hadst lov'd.*

Que amára elle: *That he had lov'd.*

Que amáramos nós: *That we had lov'd.*

Que amaréys vós: *That ye had lov'd.*

Que amarám elles: *That they had lov'd.*

Future

Future Tense.

Práza á Déos que áme eu : *God grant that I may love.*
 Que ámes tu : *That thou mayest love.*
 Que áme élla : *That he may love.*
 Que amémos nós : *That we may love.*
 Que ámeys vós : *That ye may love.*
 Que ámem éllés : *That they may love.*

Conjunctive Mood.

Present Tense.

Cómo eu ámo ou amándo eu : *When or as I love.*
 Tu ámas : *Thou lovest.*
 Elle áma : *He loveth.*
 Nós amámos : *We love.*
 Vós ámays : *Ye love.*
 Elles ámam : *They love.*

Imperfect Tense.

Cómo eu amáva ou amándo eu : *When or as I did love.*
 Tu amavas : *Thou didst love.*
 Elle amáva : *He did love.*
 Nós amávamos : *We did love.*
 Vós amáveys : *Ye did love.*
 Elles amávam : *They did love.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Cómo eu améy ou ténho amádo ou amándo eu ou
 téndo amádo : *When or as I have loved.*
 Tu amáste : *Thou hast lov'd.*
 Elle amou : *He hath lov'd.*
 Nós aménos : *We have lov'd.*

Vós

Vós amáltes : *Ye have lov'd.*
Elles amáram : *They have lov'd.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Cómo eu amára, ou tinha amádo amádo eu, ou
téndo amádo : *When I had lov'd.*
Tu amáras : *Thou hadst lov'd.*
Elle amára : *He had lov'd.*
Cómo nós amáramos : *When we had lov'd.*
Vós amáreys : *Ye had lov'd.*
Elles amáram : *They had lov'd.*

Future Tense.

Cómo eu amár ou tiver amádo : *When I shall love, or
shall have lov'd.*
Tu amáres : *Thou shalt love.*
Elle amár : *He shall love.*
Nós amarmos : *We shall love.*
Vós amárdes : *Ye shall love.*
Elles amárem : *They shall love.*

The Portuguese Conjunction peculiar to that Language.

Present Tense.

Pósto que eu áme : *Altho' I love.*
Tu ámes : *Thou lovest.*
Elle áme : *He loves.*
Nós amémos : *We love.*
Vós ámeys : *Ye love.*
Elles ámern : *They love.*

Imperfect

Imperfect Tense.

Póstoque eu amára ou amásse: *Altho' I did love.*

Tu amáras, amásse: *Thou didst love.*

Elle amára, amásse: *He did love.*

Nós amáramos, amássemos: *We did love.*

Vós amáreys, amásseys: *Ye did love.*

Elles amáram, amássem: *Tho' they did love.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Pósto que tenha amádo: *Altho' I may have lov'd.*

Tu ténhas amádo: *Thou may'st have lov'd.*

Elle tenha amádo: *He may have lov'd.*

Nós ténhamos amádo: *We may have lov'd.*

Vós ténhays amádo: *Ye may have lov'd.*

Elles ténham amádo: *They may have lov'd.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Pósto que eu tivéra amádo: *Altho' I had lov'd.*

Tivéras: *Thou hadst lov'd.*

Elle tivéra: *He had lov'd.*

Nós tivéramos amádo: *We had loved.*

Vós tivéreys: *Ye had loved.*

Elles tivéram: *They had loved.*

*Potential Mood.**Present Tense.*

Que áme eu, *that I may have*; que ey de amár, *that I must or will love*; amaréy eu, *shall I love.*

Imperfect Tense.

Amaria eu; amaria ou poderia amar: *Should or could I love.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Pude eu amar: *I might have lov'd.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Amara eu, *I had lov'd*; ou podera ter amado: *I might, could, or would have lov'd.*

Future Tense.

Amaria eu: *I would love.*

Amaréy: *I shall or will love.*

Poderéy amar: *I shall or will be able to love.*

Permissive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ame eu, *let me love*; doulhe que ame, *I grant I may love*; Más que ame, *altho' I do or may love.*

Imperfect Tense.

Amara, *I did love*; doulhe que amara, *I grant I did love*; más que amara, *altho' I did love.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Amásse eu, *I have lov'd*; doulhe que amásse eu, *I grant I have lov'd*; más que amásse, *altho' I have lov'd.*
Pre.

80 Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica.

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Amára eu, *I had lov'd*; doulhe que amára, *I grant I had lov'd*; más que tivéra amádo, *altho' I or he had lov'd*.

Future Tense.

Doulhe que vénha ou chégue eu á amár: *I grant that I may come to love.*

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Amár, *to love, both in the Present and Imperfect Tense*; as que áma, ámas, que amáva amávas, &c. *Of which, Observation will give the clearest Distinction.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter amádo, *to have lov'd*; ou que améy, amáste, amóu ou ténho, tens, têm amádo, &c.

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Ter amádo, *to have lov'd*; ou que amára, amáras, amára, ou que tinha, tínhas, tinha, amádo, &c.

Future Tense.

Que hey de amár, has, ha; que amaréy, rás, rá: *That shall or will, or is about to love; and so in the Plural.*

Another Future.

Que ouvéra, ouvéras, ouvéra, *To have been about to love; so que ouvéramos, &c. in the Plural.*

Gerunds.

Gerunds.

De amár, *of loving*; em amár, *de amár, amando,*
sendo amado, in loving, and being lov'd.
 Amár, péra amár; á fer *and péra fer amado, to be lov'd.*

Supines are as follow.

Amár & péra amár, *to love*; de fer amado, *of being lov'd*; ou péra se amár, *to be lov'd.*

Participles of the Present and Imperfect Tense.

O que áma ou amáva: *He that loves, is loving, or the Lover.*

Future Tense.

O que há ou ouvér de ámar ou péra amár: *He that shall, will, or is about to love.*

Here are some Observations worth the noting, which particularly relate to this first Conjugation. As for Example, in the Preterperfect and Preterpluperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood, the Active Verb Ténho is made use of as subservient; as Ténho amado, *I have lov'd*; Ténho lido and ouvido, *I have read and heard*; and in the Passive Voice the Verb Sou takes place; as Sou amado, lido, ouvido, *I am lov'd, read and heard.* Note also, that the Preterperfect is used without the Auxiliary Ter, and sometimes with it; v. g. Sempre vos amey muyto, *I always lov'd you dearly*; and not Sempre vos tenho amado muyto. But in another Case it is proper enough to say, Já vos escreví, and já vos tenho escrito, *I have already written to you*; of which, and the like Varieties, use will be the best Informer.

In common Speech, when the Preterperfect Tense of any Verb is made use of, the Preterperfect of the Auxiliary Ter is an Impropriety; as we do not say, Eu tive amado, lido, ouvido, but the Present Tense is more elegant; as Eu tenho, amado, lido, ouvido, I have lov'd, read, heard. So likewise in the Preterpluperfect we do not say, Eu tivéra, amado, lido, ouvido; but the Imperfect, Eu tinha, amado, lido, ouvido, I had lov'd, &c.

In the same form, when the Discourse demands a perfect Future of the Indicative, or the Future of the Conjunctive, the Auxiliary is us'd in the same Tenses; as Já eu entám teréy amado, I shall then have loved; and, Como eu tiver amado, &c. when I shall have lov'd.

The Portugueze make use of the Conjunctive Mood on many Occasions very elegantly. As first, in the Tenses of the Indicative, adding the Particle Como; as Como vósso pay vos áma tanto, sente múyto vósso ausência, Since your Father loves you so much, he is much troubled at your Absence; and so in the other Tenses, Como vósso pay vos amáva, amou, amára tanto, sentia, sentio, &c. both Verbs answering one another.

So likewise in making use only of one Gerund; as Fugiys de vósso pay, amando vos elle tanto? Do you fly from your Father who loves you so dearly?

And so in the other Tenses; as Fugiys, fugistes de vósso pay amando vos elle tanto? Did you, have you run away from the Father, he loving you so well?

Sometimes two Gerunds are properly join'd; Estando escrevendo esta carta recebi a vósso, Whilst I was writing this Letter I receiv'd yours; Morreo de repente estando disputando da morte, He died suddenly when he was disputing about Death.

Sometimes the Verb and the Gerund are Companions; as Espirou por derradéyro miseravelmente, avendo quátro ánnos entéyros que jazia entrevado, He died at last miserably, having lain four whole Years bed-rid.

The Indicative and Participle have likewise their Properties in Speech; as Como vos tenho escrito muitas cartas

cárras e nam recebído nenhúmas, fácome também ronçeyro no escrevêr, *Having wrote you many Letters, and receiv'd none, I am likewise become weary of writing; and so in the other Tenses; as* Como vos tinha, como vos tivésse escrito, &c.

At other times the Participle is only made use of, v. g. Partido vósso pay, chegou vósso irmão, *Upon your Father his departing, your Brother arriv'd.*

Another thing observable is concerning the Participle Se, which is very often referred to the Future of the Conjunctive; for Example, Se me amárdes, amávdes &c. If you will love me, I will love you; Se obedecêrdes a vósso pay, far vos ha Deos muitas mercês, If you obey your Parents, God will confer many Favours on you.

Sometimes it is refer'd to the Present and Preterperfect Tense. Example, Se sou vósso amigo, também o fuy de vósso pay, If I am your Friend, I have been also the same to your Father; Se atégora fuy néscio, daqui emdiante seréy avisado, If hitherto I have been ignorant, and play'd the Fool, for the Future I will be advised and cautious.

As to the Infinitive of the first Conjugation ending in ar, there are several Nouns that equivocate with the Verbs so express'd; as Manjár, bazar, posségár, pezár, mar, but these I leave to be distinguish'd by the Connexion of the Discourse, which will be easie to any Observer.

Then we may take notice, that when after the Verb in the Present and Imperfect of the Indicative Mood, the Pronoun Elle serves for a Case of the Verb signified by the Diminutives, lo, la, los, las, such Tenses lose the Letter r. Example, Quêro, louválo, louvála, louválos, louválas, I will praise him, it, her, or them, &c. whereas it would be improper to say, Quêro louvár á elle, á ella, á elles, á ellas; and so in other Verbs, as Quêro ouvirlo, ouvi-la, I will hear him, or her, or it, &c. But if the Diminutives the and thes stand instead of the forementioned Diminutives, the Letter r remains in its place. Example, Quêro agradecerlhe, agradecerlhes, I will pay my

Thanks or Acknowledgments to him or them. Quéro fallárlhe ou fallárlhes, I will speak to him or them.

When the Verb is in the Infinitive Mood and Future Tense, then the Auxiliary Verb Ey is added; as Amálo ey, louválo ey, I will love, praise him.

Observe, that some Verbs in the Present and Imperfect of the Infinitive Mood are terminated with the Syllable, se; v. g. Embebedáirse, to be drunk; Vingáirse, to be revenged; Negáirse, to be deny'd, or deny himself. In the first Conjugation, Entorpecéirse, to be stupid; Entristecéirse, to be sad; Metéirse, to be put in or to, or joined with, Esquecéirse, to forget, or to be forgot; in the second and in the third Conjugation, Irse, to go or be gone; Abrirse, to be opened; Rirse, to laugh; Sorirse, to laugh in the Sleeve. All which, and the like, when they have the Syllable que preceding, make the Syllable se antecedent, whereas before it was consequent; ex. g. Cúydo que se entrestése, que se ábre, to be sad, to be opened.

The Infinitive Mood is used in two distinct Forms; first, when the following Verbs precede the third Mood, viz. Póssó, I can; Dévo, I ought; Desejo, I desire; Quéro, I will; Mays quéro, I had rather; Nam quéro, I will not, and the like; for then we use the Infinitive with the latter i in all the Tenses; v. g. Desejo ou desejava, amar a virtúde, ler bons livros, ouvir Méstres doutos; I desire, or did desire to love Vertue, to read good Books, to have learned Masters. Desejeý ter amado a virtúde, ter lido bons livros, ter ouvido Méstres doutos; I desired to have lov'd Vertue, to have read good Books, to have heard learned Masters. Secondly, When certain other Verbs precede the Infinitive, for then the Idiom of the Infinitive is supplied in the Tenses of the Indicative, by prefixing the Particle que. Example, Sey que ámays as létras, I know that thou lovest Learning; Sabia que amáveys as létras, I knew that thou didst love Learning; Sey que amálies muyto as létras, and Sabia que amaréys muyto as létras, I know that thou hast lov'd, I did know that thou wilt love learning, &c.
The

The *Imperative* is likewise used in two different Manners, First, with the Verb *Ey*, I have; another Verb, and the Particle *que* preceding; v. g. *Parêceme que has de amár as létras*, and *Parêcia me que avias de amár as létras*; It is my Opinion that thou wilt love Learning; I thought that thou hadst loved, or wouldst love Learning.

Again, by supplying the Idiom in the first Future with the first Indicative; as *Parêceme que amaréy, leréy*, I think I shall love or read; sometimes by the Future of the Potential Mood; as *Parêceme que amarias, lerias ouviriás*; It is my Opinion, that thou mightest or couldst love, read or hear, &c.

At other times the Particle *que* is supplied by the Particle *de*, when the Verbs *Espéro*, I hope; *Promêto*, I promise; *Júro*, I swear; are foregoing; v. g. *Espéro, promêto, júro de tornar cedo*; I hope, promise, and swear to return presently. So, *de amár, de ler, de ouvir*, &c. Sometimes the Phrase is thus alter'd; as *Espéro, promêto, júro que hey de tornar amár, ler e ouvir*, and the like, and not improperly, *Espéro avêr de tornar cedo*.

It likewise may be observ'd in what manner Gerunds and Supines are used, viz. sometimes with the Particle *de*, and a Noun Substantive preceding; as *Tênho desejo de estudár, de lér, de ouvir*; I have a Desire to study, read, hear, &c. Sometimes it is elegant to say, *Soys diligênte em escrevêr*, Thou art diligent in writing; *Estou cansado de andár*, I am weary of going or walking; *O Románo vence assentado*, a Roman conquers sitting; ou *estando assentado*.

Sometimes the Gerunds are doubled; v. g. *estando escrevêndo esta recebia vossa*, When I was writing this, I receiv'd yours.

The third Gerund is thus used, *Soys mais péra amár que péra ser amado*, Thou art fitter to love than to be beloved.

The Supines have a Form easily distinguished, viz. *Dispúsmo péra amár*, I prepared my self for Love.

dro he muy digno de ser amado ou, muyto amo pera
 se amar: *Peter is worthy of Love, or to be loved.*

**Examples of the first Conjugation in the Pas-
 sive Voice with Participles, Active and
 Passive, and the several Formations.**

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Eu sou amado: *I am lov'd.*
 Tu es amado: *Thou art lov'd.*
 Elle he amado: *He is lov'd.*
 Nós somos amados: *We are lov'd.*
 Vós soys amados: *You are lov'd.*
 Elles sam amados: *They are lov'd.*

Imperfect Tense.

Eu era amado: *I was lov'd.*
 Tu éras amado: *Thou wert lov'd.*
 Elle éra amado: *He was lov'd.*
 Nós éramos amados: *We were lov'd.*
 Vós éreys amados: *You were lov'd.*
 Elles eram amados: *They were lov'd.*

And indeed (to excuse Tedium) by well under-
 standing the conjugating of the Verb Substantive Sou,
 thro' all the Moods and Tenses, we may well apprehend
 what the Passive Voice is, by the Addition of the Partici-
 ple in all the Conjugations, Moods and Tenses.

So that it will be superfluous to mention any thing
 more than some few Observations that may casually occur

in Writing or Discourse, viz. The Passive Voice in the third Persons both Singular and Plural, is not only form'd out of the Verb Substantive Sou, and the Participle, but out of the Tenses of the Verb Active, by adding the Participle Se, placed before, as A virtude se ama, Virtue is beloved; As virtudes se amam, Virtues are beloved. Example of the Participle Se, placed after the Verb A-mava-se, amou-se a virtude, amavam-se, amaram-se as virtudes; Virtue and Virtues was and were lov'd. So O livro se lê, se lia, se lêo, ou o livro lê-se, lise and lêse; The Book is, was, and hath been read.

It may be observ'd, that in the foresaid third Persons of the Passive Voice the Letter S is single; as Ama-se, amava-se, lê-se, lia-se; to distinguish the first and third Persons Singular of the Present and Imperfect Tense of the Optative Mood in the Active Voice, which are written with a double S; as Oxala amasse eu, ou amasse elle, & lesse, ou visse, &c. Besides the same Form of Speech may be made of the Verb Substantive, and the Participle of the Preterperfect Tense; v. g. A virtude he, era, foy amada; Virtue is, was, and hath been esteem'd and lov'd. And so in the Plural; as Virtudes sam, eram, foram amadas, &c.

Note, That the Substantive Verb Sou, I am, is not only joined with Verbs Passive in all Tenses, but that the Auxiliary Verb Ey, I have, is used with the Infinitive of the said Verb Sou; which is Ser, to be, and the Participle of the Preterperfect Tense of the Passive Voice; ex. g. Ey avia, ouve, ouvêra, averêy de ser amado, enlinado, lido, ouvido. All which, with the Verb Tenho, would be very improper, &c.

Of the Participles and Formations of the first Conjugation.

IT is necessary to take Cognizance of several things which concur to make this Language more perfect.

Every Verb Active hath a Participle of the Present and Future Tenses. The first is used when the Relative Particle *que* is prefix'd, viz. *Matou a Pedro que estava dormindo*, He hath killed Peter, who was sleeping; ou *Mata a Pedro que está dormindo*, He kills Peter sleeping.

The Participle of the Present Tense is also otherwise used; as when we say, *O que ama ou amava, o que ensina ou ensinava, o que lê ou lia*; Loving, teaching or reading, or which doth or did love, which doth or did teach, which doth or did read.

Some Verbs are allotted a peculiar Participle; as *Amante*, a Lover; *Lente*, a Reader; *Ouvinte*, a Hearer; *Andante*, a Walker or Goer, and some few others; for we do not make use of *Ensinante*, a Teacher; *Ufante* nor *bern fallante*, unless by chance a Poet may presume to take that Liberty. The Participle Active of the Future Tense is properly used when the Discourse is of a Person that is about to, or will do any thing for the Future; and then the Auxiliary *ey*, with the Particle *de*, and the Infinitive Active of any Verb make up the Construction, changing the Verb *ey* thro' all its Tenses, viz. *Ey de amar, avia, ouve de ler, ouvir*; and so of the rest of the Verbs Active and Neuter.

The Verb Passive hath an Adjective Participle of a double Termination, viz. Masculine and Feminine in *o* and *a*; as *Amado, amada*, Loved; *Lido, lida*, Read; *Ouvido, ouvida*, Heard; *Visto, vista*, Seen; *Vindo, vinda*, Come. The same Participle almost all Verbs Neuter claim, which in the said Tenses have a Passive Signification, which they have at least in the third Person Singular; as *Tornado*, Turned; *Corrido*, Run. Excepting the Verbs *Posso* and *Rio*, I can, and I laugh; for the Participles *Podido* and *Rido* are not usual; altho' some not altogether incurious will say, *Nam hey podido fazer isto*, I have not been able to do this; *Muyto ey rido*, I have laughed much.

Every

Every Verb hath its Participle of the Future Tense in the Passive Voice, that hath its Participle of the Preterperfect Tense, with which, and the Auxiliary Ey, and the Infinitive Ser, it runs through all the Moods and Tenses; ex. g. Ey, avia, ouve de ser amado lido, ouvido, vindo, ido, &c. Here are excepted such Verbs, which being Passive, want the Participle of the Preterperfect Tense, and such Neuters as have the said Participle, yet want the Passive Voice in all the Tenses. The Verb Matar, I kill, wants its proper Participle, and is forced to borrow it from the Verb Mórto, I die; viz. it is inelegant to say, Tenho matado, but Tenho morto, I have killed.

Next in order follow the Classes of the second and third Conjugations both in the Active and Passive Voice.

Example of the second Conjugation Active.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Eu léyo: I read.

Tu les: Thou readest.

Elle le: He readeth.

Nôs lémos: We read.

Vôs lédes: Ye read.

Elles lem: They read.

Imperfect Tense.

Eu lia: I did read.

Tu lías: Thou didst read.

Elle lia: He did read.

Nôs líamos: We did read.

Vôs líeys: Ye did read.

Elles líam: They did read.

Pre

Every Verb hath its Participle of the Future Tense in
 the Passive Voice, *Exemplo* *Eu lerá* I shall read
Tu lerás thou shalt read, and the Auxiliary *Ev.* and the
 Infinitive *ler* it will be understood. *Ex.* *Eu lerá*
Tu lerás *Elle lerá* *Nós leremos* *Vós lereis*
Eles lerão *tem lido* *He had read*
Nós leremos *temos lido* *We had read*
Vós lereis *lendes lido* *You had read*
Eles lerão *tem lido* *They had read*
Eu lera *ou tinha lido* *I had read*
Tu leras *tinha lido* *Thou hadst read*
Elle lera *tinha lido* *He had read*
Nós leramos *tinhamos lido* *We had read*
Vós lereys *tinheys lido* *You had read*
Eles leram *tinham lido* *They had read*

Future Vintages

Eu leréy: I shall or will read.
 Tu léras: Thou shalt or wilt read.
 Elle lerá: He shall or will read.
 Nós lerémos: We shall or will read.
 Vós leréys: Ye shall or will read.
 Elles lerám: They shall or will read.

Future Perfect.

Ja eu entám teréy lido: *I then shall have read.*
 Tu terás lido: *Thou shalt have read.*
 Elle terá lido: *He shall have read.*
 Nôs terémós lido: *We shall have read.*
 Vós teréys lido: *Ye shall have read.*
 Ellés terám lido: *They shall have read.*

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Present Tense.

Lé tu: *Read thou.*
 Léya elle: *Let him read.*
 Léamos nós: *Let us read.*
 Léde vós: *Read ye.*
 Léyam elles: *Let them read.*
 Future or Mandative Tense.

Lerás tu: *Thou shalt read.*
 Lerá elle: *He shall read.*
 Leréys vós: *Ye shall read.*
 Lerám elles: *They shall read.*

Optative Mood.

Present Tense.

Oxalá léra eu ou lésse: *Would I might or could read.*
 Léras tu ou lésses: *Thou mightst or couldst read.*
 Léra elle ou lésse: *He might or could read.*
 Léramos nós ou léssamos: *We might or could read.*
 Léreys vós ou lésséys: *Ye might or could read.*
 Léram elles ou léssém: *They might or could read.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Quéyra Déos que ténha eu lido: *God grant that I have or may have read.*
 Que ténhas tu lido: *That thou hast read.*
 Que ténha elle lido: *That he hath read.*

Que

Que ténhamos nós lido : *That we have read.*
 Que ténhays vós lido : *That you have read.*
 Que ténham elles lido : *That they have read.*

Præterpluperfect Tense.

Prouvéra á Déos que léra eu ou tivéra lido : *Would to God that I had read.*
 Que léras tu ou tivésses lido : *That thou hadst read.*
 Que léra elle ou tivésses lido : *That he had read.*
 Que léramos nós ou tivéramos lido : *That we had read.*
 Que léreys vós ou tivéreys lido : *That you had read.*
 Que léram elles ou tivéram lido : *That they had read.*

Future Tense.

Práza a Déos que léya eu : *Pray God I may read.*
 Que léyas tu : *That thou mayest read.*
 Que léya elle : *That he may read.*
 Que léyamos nós : *That we may read.*
 Que léyays vós : *That ye may read.*
 Que léyam elles : *That they may read.*

Conjunctive Mood as the Indicative, only
Como added.

Cómo eu lévo : *When I read.*
 Cómo eu lia : *When I did read.*
 Cómo eu li ou ténho lido : *When I have read.*
 Cómo eu léra ou tivéra lido : *When I had read.*

Future Tense.

Cómo eu ler ou tiver lido : *When I shall, or shall have read.*

Cómo

Cómo tu leres ou tivéres lido: *When thou shalt, or shalt have read.*

Cómo elle lér ou tivér lido: *When he shall, or shall have read.*

Cómo nôs lérmôs ou tivérmôs lido: *When we shall, or shall have read.*

Cómo vôs lérdes ou tivérdes lido: *When ye shall, or shall have read.*

Cómo elles lérem ou tivérem lido: *When they shall, or shall have read.*

Conjunctive Mood peculiar to this Language.

Present Tense.

Póstoque eu léya: *Tho' I read.*

Tu léyas: *Thou readest.*

Elle léya: *He readeth.*

Nôs léyamos: *We read.*

Vôs léyays: *Ye read.*

Elles léyam: *They read.*

Imperfect Tense.

Póstoque eu léra: *Tho' I did, might, could or should read.*

Tu léras: *Tho' thou didst, might'st, could'st or should'st read.*

Elle léra: *Tho' he did, might, could or should read.*

Nôs léramos: *Tho' we did, might, could or should read.*

Vôs léreys: *Tho' ye did, might, could or should read.*

Elles léram: *Tho' they did, might, could or should read.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Pôstoque eu ténha lido: *Altho' I have read.*

Tu ténhas lido: *Altho' thou hast read.*

Elle ténha lido: *Altho' he had read.*

Nôs ténhamos lido: *Altho' we have read.*

Vós ténhays lido: *Altho' ye have read.*

Elles ténham lido: *Altho' they have read.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Pôstoque eu tivera lido: *Altho' I had read.*

Tu tivêras lido: *Altho' thou hadst read.*

Elle tivera lido: *Altho' he had read.*

Nôs tivéramos lido: *Altho' we had read.*

Vós tivéreys lido: *Altho' ye had read.*

Elles tivéram lido: *Altho' they had read.*

Potential Mood.

Present Tense.

Que léya, *That I may read; or que ey de ler, leréy eu, I shall or will read.*

Imperfect Tense.

Leria eu, *I might read; or pudéra ler, I might, or could read.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Pude ler, *I might or could have read.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Léra eu, *I had read; or pudéra ter lido: I might have read.*

Future

Future Tense.

Lería eu, *I might read*; leréy, *I shall or will read*; or poderéy ler: *I shall be able to read.*

Permissive or Concessive Mood.

Present Tense.

Léya: *I may read*. Doulhe he que léya: *I grant I may read*. Másque léya: *Altho' I may read.*

Imperfect Tense.

Léya: *I might or could read*. Doulhe que léya, *I grant I might or could read*. Másque léya; *Altho' I could read.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Léffe, doulhe que léffe: *I grant I have read*. Másque léffe: *Altho' I have read.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Léra, doulhe que lera: *Grant I had read*. Másque lera: *Altho' I had read*; ou másque tivéra lido.

Future Tense.

Doulhe que vénha ou chéque eu á lér: *I grant I shall or may come to read.*

Potential

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ler, to read; and prefixing the Particle Que; the same thro' all the Tenses and Persons of the Indicative Mood; as Que lero, que les, que le, &c.

Imperfect Tense.

Ler, to read; ou que lia, lias lia, &c.

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter lido, to have read; ou que li, que lêsta, que léo, &c.

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Ter lido, to have read; ou que léra, que léras, que léra, &c.

Future Tense.

Que ey, has, ha de ler, ou que leréy, lerás, lerá: That I, thou, he shall or will read.

Another Future.

Que ouvéra, que ouvérás, que ouvéra de ler: That I, thou, he shall or will, or I should have read, &c.

Gerunds.

De ler: Of reading.

Em ler, de ler, léndo ou séndo lido: In reading.

A ler, péra ler, á ser & péra ser lido: To be read.

Supines.

*Supines.*A ler, péra ler: *To read.*De ser lido, péra ser lido: *To be read.**Participles Active, Present and Imperfect.*O que le ou líá: *Reading.**Future.*O que ha ou ouvêr de ler: *That is about to read, or shall read.*

The Passive Voice is formed by adding the Participle of the Preterperfect Tenses, Lido, to all the Moods, Tenses and Persons of the Verb Substantive Sou. As for Example, Sou lido, éra lido, fuy lido, éra ou fóra lido, se-réy lido; I am, was, have been, had been, shall be read. And so thro' all the Moods and Tenses, which I shall here omit as needless, and to avoid Tedioufness and Prolixity.

Here follows an Example of the Third Conjugation, Ouvir, to hear.

*Indicative Mood.**Present Tense.*Eu ouço: *I hear.*Tu ouves: *Thou bearest.*Elle ouve: *He beareth.*Nos ouvimos: *We hear.*Vós ouvíeis: *Ye did hear.*Elles ouvem: *They hear.*

*Imperfect Tense.*Eu ouvía: *I did hear.*Tu ouvías: *Thou didst hear.*Elle ouvía: *He did hear.*Nós ouvíamos: *We did hear.*Vós ouvíeis: *Ye did hear.*Elles ouvíam: *They did hear.**Preterperfect Tense.*Eu ouvi ou tenho ouvido: *I have heard.*Tu ouviste ou tens ouvido: *Thou hast heard.*Elle ouviu ou tem ouvido: *He hath heard.*Nós ouvimos ou temos ouvido: *We have heard.*Vós ouvistes ou tendes ouvido: *Ye have heard.*Elles ouviram ou tem ouvido: *They have heard.**Preterpluperfect Tense.*Eu ouvira ou tinha ouvido: *I had heard.*Tu ouviras ou tinhas ouvido: *Thou hadst heard.*Elle ouvira ou tinha ouvido: *He had heard.*Nós ouvíramos ou tínhamos ouvido: *We had heard.*Vós ouvíreis ou tínheys ouvido: *Ye had heard.*Elles ouviram ou tinham ouvido: *They had heard.**The Imperfect Future.*Eu ouviréy: *I shall or will hear.*Tu ouvirás: *Thou shalt or wilt hear.*Elle ouvirá: *He shall or will hear.*Nós ouviremos: *We shall or will hear.*Vós ouvireys: *Ye shall or will hear.*Elles ouvirám: *They shall or will hear.*

The Perfect Future.

Ja eu entám teréy ouvido: *I shall then have heard.*

Tu terás: *Thou shalt then have heard.*

Elle terá: *He shall then have heard.*

Nôs terémos: *We shall then have heard.*

Vós teréys: *Ye shall then have heard.*

Elles terám: *They shall then have heard.*

*Imperative Mood.**Present Tense.*

Oúve tu: *Hear thou.*

Oúça elle: *Let him hear.*

Ouçámds nós: *Let us hear.*

Ouví vós: *Hear ye.*

Ouçam elles: *Let them hear.*

Future or Mandative Tense.

Ouvirá tu: *Thou shalt hear.*

Ouvirá elle: *He shall hear.*

Ouviréys vós: *Ye shall hear.*

Ouviráam elles: *They shall hear.*

*Optative Mood.**Present and Imperfect Tense.*

Oxalá ouvira eu ou ouvísse: *Would I might or could hear.*

Ouviras tu ou ouvísse: *Thou might'st or could'st hear.*

Ouvíra elle ou ouvísse : *He might or could bear.*
 Ouvíramos nós ou ouvíssemos : *We might or could bear.*
 Ouvíreys vós ou ouvísseys : *Ye might or could bear.*
 Ouvíram elles ou ouvíssem : *They might or could bear.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Quéyra Déos que ténha eu ouvido : *God grant that I have heard.*
 Que ténhas tu ouvido : *That thou hast heard.*
 Que ténha elle ouvido : *That he hath heard.*
 Que ténhamos nós ouvido : *That we have heard.*
 Que ténhays vós ouvido : *That ye have heard.*
 Que ténham elles ouvido : *That they have heard.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Prouvéra a Déos que ouvíra eu : *Would I had heard.*
 Que ouvíras tu : *Thou hadst heard.*
 Que ouvíra elle : *He had heard.*
 Prouvéra a Déos que ouvíramos nós : *Would we had heard.*
 Que ouvísseys vós : *Ye had heard.*
 Que ouvíssem elles : *They had heard.*

Future Tense.

Práça a Déos que ouça eu : *God grant that I may hear.*
 Que ouças tu : *That thou mayst hear.*
 Que ouça elle : *That he may hear.*
 Que ouçamos nós : *That we may hear.*
 Que ouçays vós : *That ye may hear.*
 Que ouçam elles : *That they may hear.*

Conjunctive Mood, only by prefixing the Particle *Cómo*.

Present Tense.

Cómo eu ouço ou ouvindo eu: When I bear, &c.

Imperfect Tense.

Cómo eu ouvía ou ouvindo eu: When I did bear, &c.

Preterperfect Tense.

Cómo eu ouvi ou tenho ouvido: When I have heard, &c.

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Cómo eu ouvira ou tinha ouvido: When I had heard, &c.

Future Tense.

Cómo eu ouvir ou tiver ouvido: When I shall bear, or have heard.

Cómo tu ouvires ou tiveres ouvido: When thou shalt bear, or have heard.

Cómo elle ouvir ou tiver ouvido: When he shall bear, or have heard.

Cómo nós ouvirmos ou tivermos ouvido: When we shall bear, or have heard.

Cómo vós ouvirdes ou tiverdes ouvido: When ye shall bear, or have heard.

Cómo elles ouvirem ou tiverem ouvido: When they shall bear, or have heard.

The Conjunctive Mood, peculiar to this
Language,

Present Tense,

Póstoque eu ouça: *Altho' I may bear.*
 Tu ouças: *Altho' thou may'st bear.*
 Elle ouça: *Altho' he may bear.*
 Nós ouçamos: *Altho' we may bear.*
 Vós ouçays: *Altho' ye may bear.*
 Elles ouçam: *Altho' they may bear.*

Imperfect Tense,

Póstoque eu ouvira ou ouvísse: *Altho' I did or might bear.*
 Tu ouviras, ouvísse: *Altho' thou did'st or might'st bear.*
 Elle ouvira, ouvísse: *Altho' he did or might bear.*
 Nós ouvíramos, ouvíssemos: *Altho' we did or might bear.*
 Vós ouvíreys, ouvísseys: *Altho' ye did or might bear.*
 Elles ouvíram, ouvíssem: *Altho' they did or might bear.*

Preterperfect Tense,

Póstoque eu tenha ouvido: *Altho' I have or may have heard.*
 Tu téngas ouvido: *Altho' thou hast or may'st have heard.*
 Elle tenha ouvido: *Altho' he hath or might have heard.*
 Nós tenhamos ouvido: *Altho' we have or might have heard.*
 Vós ténhays ouvido: *Altho' ye have or might have heard.*
 Elles tenham ouvido: *Altho' they have, or might have heard.*

Pre-

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Póstoque eu tivéra ouvido : *Altho' I had heard.*

Tu tivéras ouvido : *Altho' thou hadst heard.*

Elle tivéra ouvido : *Altho' he had heard.*

Nôs tivéramos ouvido : *Altho' we had heard.*

Vós ttivéreys ouvido : *Altho' ye had heard.*

Elles tivéram ouvido : *Altho' they have heard.*

*Potential Mood.**Present Tense.*

Que ouça eu : *That I may hear.*

Que ey de ouvir : *That I shall or will hear.*

Ouviréy eu : *I shall or will hear.*

Imperfect Tense.

Ouviría eu : *I might hear.*

Ouvíra : *I could or should hear.*

Pudéra ouvir : *I might hear.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Púde eu ouvir : *I might have heard.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Ouvíra eu ou pudéra ter ouvido : *I had or might have heard.*

Future Tense.

Ouvíra eu, ouviréy ou poderéy ouvir : *I may hear, I shall hear, I shall be able to hear.*

Permissive or Concessive Mood.

Present Tense.

Oûça, *I may bear*; Dóulhe que oûça, *I grant I may bear*; Máſque oûça, *Altho' I bear.*

Imperfect Tense.

Ouvíra, *I might bear*; Dóulhe que ouvíra, *I grant I might bear*; Máſque ouvíra, *Altho' I might bear.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Ouvísſe, *I have heard*; Dóulhe que ouvísſe, *I grant I have heard*; Máſque ouvísſe, *Altho' I have heard.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Ouvíra, *I had heard*; Dóulhe que ouvíra, *I grant I had heard*; Máſque tivéra ouvido, *Altho' I had heard.*

Future Tense.

Dóulhe que vénha eu ou chégue á ouvir; *I grant I may come to bear.*

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ouvir ou que oûço, oúves, oúve: *To bear.*

Imperfect

Imperfect Tense.

Ouvír ou que ouvía, ouvías: &c. *To bear,*

Preterperfect Tense.

Tér ouvido ou que ouvi, ouviste ou que tenho, têm
tem ouvido: *To have heard.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Ter ouvido ou que ouvira, ouviras, ouvira, ou que
tinha, tinhas, tinha ouvido: *To have heard, or
that had heard.*

Future First.

Que ey, has ha de ouvír, ou que ouviréy, ouvirás,
ouvirá: *To be about to bear, or that I, thou, he shall
or will bear; and so in the Plural.*

Future Second.

Que ouvéra, ouvéras, ouvéra de ouvír: *To have been
about to bear, or that might, could or should bear, or
have heard.*

Gerunds.

De ouvír: *Of bearing.*

Em ouvír, de ouvir, ouvindo, & sendo ouvido: *In
bearing, of bearing, bearing, and being heard.*

A ouvír & péra ouvír; á ser & péra ser ouvido: *To
bear; to be heard.*

Supines.

Supines.

A ouvir & pera ouvir: *To hear.*
 A ser ouvido, & pera se ouvir: *To be heard.*

Participle Active Present.

O que ouve ou ouvía: *Hearing, or that beareth, or did hear.*

Participle Future.

O que ha de ouvir, ou ouvér de ouvir: *That shall or will, or is about to hear.*

The Third Conjugation in the Passive Voice is formed thro' all the Moods and Tenses of the Verb Substantive Sou, adding the Participle Ouvído, as the two Precedent are.

Some Observations touching the Second and Third Conjugations, very necessary to be taken notice of.

TAke notice first, that as there is very little Variety or Difference in the Terminations of Verbs of the first Conjugation thro' all the Moods and Tenses; so the said Difference is very observable in the Second and Third Conjugations, their Verbs not keeping the same Letters as in the first, but either altogether losing or changing them. Example in the Second Conjugation: They do not only lose the last Letter o of the Present Indicative in the other Tenses, but also in the Imperfect and Preterperfect change the Syllable ey into i; viz. Léyo, I do read; Líá, I did read; and Li, I have read: So Créyo, I do believe; Cría,

Cria, I did believe; *Cri*, I have believ'd. Also such Verbs as have *j* before *o* in the other Tenses, change it into *g*; as *Rânjo*, rangia, rangi, rangera; and *Rêjo*, regia, regi, regera; To range, to govern. The Verb *Vêjo* I see in the other Tenses loses the Letter *j*; as *Via*, I did see; *Vi* and *Vira*, I have and had seen; except the Future of the Optative; as *Prâza á Dêos que vêja eu*, God grant that I may see. In the third Persons, Singular and Plural, of the Present Imperative; as *Vêja elle*, *vêjam elles*, Let him or them see; and in the Present of the Conjunctive and Infinitive.

Some Verbs that have *e* before *o* in the Present Indicative change it in the other Tenses into *d*; as *Pêco*, I lose; *Pardia*, I did lose; *Perdi* and *perdera*, I have and had lost.

And when we come to Verbs of the Third Conjugation, there is to be seen strange Mutation, even in the Present Indicative, as in the Verbs *Ouço*, ouves, ouve, ouvimos, ouviys, ouvem. *Tino*, times, tine, tinimos, tiniys, tinem. Where the Verb *Ouço* doth not only change its *o*, but its *g* into *v*, in all the Tenses, excepting those aforementioned in the Verb *Vêjo*.

The Verb *Mêco* I measure changes its *o* into *d* in the rest of the Tenses; as *Mêco*, medes, media, medi. So *Pêco*, I desire; *pêdes*, *pedia*, *pedi*.

Verbs that have *j* before *o* in the Present Indicative in the other Tenses and Persons change *j* into *g*; as *Fînjo*, I feign; *Fînges*, fingia, fingi, &c. *Afflîjo*, I afflict; *Afflîges*, affligia, affligi, &c. So in the Verbs *Dirîjo*, I direct; *Frijo*, I fry; *Tînjo*, I die; *Cînjo*, I gird, &c.

There are other Verbs that do not only lose the last, or change the last Vowel, but also the last save one, or the Penultima, and that in two Kinds. The first change is in the Penultima into *e* in the rest of the Persons and Tenses, v. g. *Fîro*, I strike; *fêres*, *feria*, *feri*; *Sîgo*, I follow; *lêsques*, *seguia*, *seguí*. *Mînto*, I lie; *mêntes*, *mentia*, *mentí*. So *Frijo*, *frêges*, *cîrno*, *cêrnes*, I am apprehensive of; *Sînto*, *Sêntes*; *Perlîgo*, I pursue, *perlêsques*; *Sîrvo*,

Sirvo, I serve; Serves, and the like; But they keep the Letter i in the Third Persons Singular and Plural Present of the Imperative; as Siga elle, figam elles, let him or them follow: And in the Future Optative in all the Persons; as Práza á Déos que siga, sigas, siga, &c. Also in the first Persons of the Conjunctive and Infinitive; as Como eu siga, when I follow; and que siga, to follow.

The Second Kind are such Verbs as having u in the Penultima in all the other Tenses and Persons, change it into o; v. g. Búlo, I meddle with; bôles, bolia, bolir. Durmo, I sleep; dormes, dorme, dormia, dormir. Engulo, I swallow; engôles, engôle, engolia, engolir. Sumo, I sum; somes, some, somia, somir. Cubro, I cover; cúbres, cobre, cobria, cobrir. Subo, I come or go up; sóbes, sóbe, sobia, sobir. Tusso, I cough; tôsses, tôsse, tossia, tossir. And thus they are easily distinguish'd from such as never lose the Vowel u, nor change it into o; as Conclúo, conclúes, concluír; Grunho, grunhes, grunhir; Zúno, zúnes, zunir. It is observable, that these Verbs that change u into o, do not use the same Change in the Third Person Singular and Plural of the Present Imperative; as Búla ou búba elle, Búlam ou búbam elles, let him or them meddle or come up. So in all Persons of the Future Optative; as Práza á Déos que búla ou búba eu, que búlas ou búbas tu, God grant that I or thou may or mayest meddle or come up, &c. Also in the first Persons of the Conjunctive and Infinitive; as Cóino súbo, cómo búlo, & que súbo, que búlo.

There is likewise a Variety observable in the Participle of the Preterperfect Tense of the Passive Voice in the Verbs of Second and Third Conjugation; for altho' they commonly end in ido, as Lido, ído, vencido, corrido, yet several end in to; as Féyto, Made or done, from the Verb Fáço, I make or do; Vísito, Seen from; Véjo, I see; Róto, Torn, from Rómpo; Bénto, Blessed, from Bénzo; Pósto, Put, from Pónho; Chéyo, Full, from éncho,

êncho, belongs to the Second Conjugation. Eleito, cho-
sen, from elejo; Dito, said, from digo; Absolto, absol-
v'd, from absolvo; Resoluto, resolv'd, from resol-
vo; Escrito, written, from escrevo. Of the Third are
Frito, fried, from frigir; Surto, from surgir, to rise;
Aberto, Open, from Abrir; Cuberto, Covered, from
Cobrir; Correto from Corrigir, To correct. The
Verb Vênho and its Compounds end their Participles in
indo; as Vindo, Come; Avindo, delavindo, &c.
As for other Conjugations, it will be both needless and
tedious to say any thing concerning them, being easily dis-
covered to the more Curious, both in reading and Conversa-
tion.

It may be convenient to say something of the Anomalous
or irregular Verbs and their Formations.

It hath been already observ'd, that few or no Verbs of
the first Conjugation are reputed anomalous; but of the
Second and Third there are found several; of the Second
the Verb Sou is accounted one, the Second Person Present
Indicative ending in es; so the Verb Ey and Ténho are
reputed of the same Classis, and Fâco, fâzes, fiz, fazer,
feyto. Ténho, with its compounds, Aténho, Contén-
ho, Deténho, Manténho, Reténho, Sosténho. Pre-
terperfect, Tive; Infinitive, Ter; Participle, Tido.
So the Verb Séy, sâbes, sâbe; Preterperfect, Sôube;
Infinitive, Saber; Participle, Sabido, Known. To which
may be added the Verb Pôssô, pôdes, pôde; Preterper-
fect, Pûde; Infinitive, Póder, no such Participle as Po-
dido being allowed. Also the Verb Digo & desdigo, dizes,
diz; Preterperfect, Disse; Infinitive, Dizér; Partici-
ple, Dito. And Trágo, trâzes, tráz; Preterp. Trou-
xe; Infin. Trazér; Partic. Trazido; with the Verb
Quéro, quêres, quér; Preterp. Quíz; Infin. Querér;
Partic. Querido. So its Compounds, Mays quéro,
nam quéro. To this likewise is referred the Defective
Verb Aprázme, Aprázte, Aprázlhe; Preterp. Aprôu-
verme; Infin. Aprazér; it wants a Participle. Preterp.
As also the Defective Verb, Sóes, thou art want; Sôe &
sôem;

stem; Imperf. *Soia, soias, soia, &c.* and *Pônho, põns, põm*; Preterp. *Púz*; Infin. *Pór*; Particip. *Pósto*, with 1st & 2d Compounds; as *Antepônho, Compônho, Depônho, Dispônho, Expônho, Impônho, Interpônho, Oppônho, Propônho, Prepônho, Pospônho, Repônho, Suppônho, Trespônho*. Preterplap. *Puzêta, puzêras, puzêra*; Future Conjunctive, *Cómo eu puzêr, puzêres, puzêr*.

To the Third Conjugation belongs the Verb *Río, ris, ri*; Preterp. *Ri*, and Infin. *Rir*, it wants the Particip. Preterp. altho' some will without Impropropriety say, *Foy rido de todos*, he was laugh'd at by all. So the Verb *Vénho, vens, vem*; Preterp. *Vím*; Inf. *Vír*; Particip. *Víndo*, Come. As also its Compounds, *Avénho, Antevénho, Convénho, Intervénho*, and the Impersonal, *Convém*; Preterp. *Convêyo*; Infin. *Convír*, it wants a Particip. Preterp.

Hitherto also is referred the Verb *Vou, vas, vay*. Imperf. *Hía, hías, hía*; Preterp. *Fuy ou ténho ido, fólte, foy*; Preterpl. *Fôra ou tinha ido, fôras, fôra*; Future, *Irêy, irás, irá*; Future 2d. *Ja eu entám terêy ido*; Present Imperat. *Vay tu, va elle, vámos nós, idé vós, váyam elles*; Future Imper. *Irás tu, irá elle*; Future Opt. *Práza á Déos que va eu*; Fut. Conjunct. *Cómo eu for ou tiver ido*; Present and Imper. of the Infinit. *Ir ou que vou, vas, vay ou que hía, hías, hía*; Particip. Preterp. *ido*.

Of Adverbs in their Order.

Adverbs in the Portuguese Tongue are very numerous, and are divided into several Classes distinguished by their Relation either to Time, Place, Quantity, Quality or Number.

Adverbs of time are such; as *Agóra, Now*; *Ja, Already*; *Ja entám, Then already*; *Jámais, Never*; *Ja góra,*

gôra, Just now; Já ha hum pedáço, A little while ago; Já muyto ha, It is now long since; Tarde, Late; Cedo, Soon or early; Logo, Presently; Entám ou entón-ces, Then; Sêmpre, Ever; Núnca, Never; Ao pre-sente, At this time; Algumhóra, Sometimes; Ainda, Yet; Adelhóras, Unseasonably; Antesque, Before that; Con-tinuadamente, Continually; Abom tempo, Seasonably; Subitamente, Suddenly; Cada día, Daily; Hoje, To day; Amenhám, To morrow; Despóys de amenhám, The day after to morrow; Ontem, Yesterday; Antón-tem, The day before yesterday; Despóys, Afterwards; Despóys que, After that; Désde, Since then, & désde entám; daqui ha pouco, Lately; Daquí adiante, From henceforward; Entretánte, In the mean while.

Adverbs of Place are such as follow; Aquí, Here; Allí, There; Acolá, In that and this place, or thereabouts; Daquí, Hence; Péra alí ou pára ésta pártē, Hither; Atelí, Hitherto; Cá, Hither; Lá ónde tu estás, There where thou art; Daquí péra alí, Here and there, hither and hither; Por óutra pártē, & em óutra pártē, Else-where; Em algúm lugar, Somewhere; De algúm lugar, From a certain place; De frónte de óutro lugar, From the other side, or front of the other place; Em óutra pártē, In another part, or elsewhere; De óutro lugar, From another place; Onde, Where; Em qualquér pár-te, Wheresoever; Em tóda a pártē, Everywhere; On-de quér, Wherever; Dêntro, Within; Fóra, Out or without; Virádo péra dêntro, Turn'd inwards; Além, On that side, on the other side, beyond; Aquém, On this side; De qualquér pártē, From whence soever; Dán-tre, From between; Açima, Above; De cima, From above; De báyxō, From below, beneath or under.

Adverbs of Quantity or Measure are as follow; Pou-co, Little; Muyto, Much; Assáz ou bastantamēte, Enough; Demasiadamēte, Too much; Abundante-mēte, Abundantly; A montôes, In great Quantities or Heaps; Muyto mays, Much more; Pouco mays, Little more; Pouco mais ou ménos, About, or little more, or less.

Adverbs

Adverbs denoting Quality are these and the like ; Prudentemente, Prudently ; Atrevidamente, Boldly ; Elegantemente, Elegantly ; Acinte, adrede, de propósito, Industriously, or purposely ; Asabendas, Knowingly ; Suavemente, Sweetly ; Discretamente, Discreetly ; Engenhosamente, Ingeniously ; Galantemente, Neatly, prettily, finely. &c. Legeyramente, Nimble ; Gentilmente, Genteely ; Facilmente, Easily ; De má mente, Unwillingly ; De maravilha, Rarely or scarcely ; Demarcadamente, Limitedly ; De memória, By heart or memory. Where note, that the Portugeze Adjectives do very often become Adverbs by the Addition of mente, though not always ; for it would be very gross and improper to say, Brancamente, Pretamente, Verdemente, Whitely, Blackly, Greenly, and the like.

Adverbs of Number are ordinary, and run thro' all the Series of reckoning, from One to an Hundred Thousand, by the help of its Adjunct, Vez & vézes, Time and times ; ex. g. Múytas vézes, Often ; Húma vez, Once ; Duas vézes, Twice ; Tres vézes, Thrice ; Quatro vézes, Four times ; and so on to Cem mil vézes, A Hundred Thousand times.

There are other kinds of Adverbs, by which we express our Affections, and signifie various Actions ; ex. g. Adverbs of wishing, as Ose, Oh if ! Oxalá, Would to God ; Oquem me dêra ! Oh would ! Práza a Déos, God grant ; others of affirming, as Assim he, so it is, or it is so ; Sim, So ; Aozádas & certamente, Most certainly ; De veras ou na verdade, Truly, or in earnest ; Convém á saber, to wit ; Verdadeyramente, Faithfully and truly.

Some are Negatives ; as Nam, Not ; Ainda nam, Not yet ; De nenhúm módo, by no means ; Em nenhúma maneyra, By no manner of way, or the same as before ; Nomáys, No more ; Nada ménos, Nothing less ; Nada, Nothing ; Tam pouco, Neither ; Nunca já mays, Never more. Some of admonishing ; as Hora
sus,

lus, Look ye ; Acabây ja, acabây todos ja, Go to:

*Other Adverbs are demonstrating, as Exaqui, Behold ; Além disto, Moreover or besides ; Vêdes aqui, Do ye see or behold ? Finalmente, At length, or at last ; Por derradeyro, Last of all ; Em fim, In fine ; Daliadi-
ante, Thenceforward ; Desdeque, Since ; Eylo aqui, Look
here, or behold.*

*Adverbs of Doubt, as Por ventura, Perhaps ; A ca-
so, Perchance ; Pôde ser que, Perhaps ; Quica ou qui-
cays, The same.*

*Adverbs interrogatory, or of Enquiry, as Como ?
How and why ? Por que rezam ? Wherefore ? A que
propósito ? To what purpose ? Para que ? Why ? Que ?
What ?*

*Some are of uniting, as Apâr & juntamente, Toge-
ther ; Em companhia, Together ; or in Company ;
Entreâmbos juntos, Between both of us ; Irmãmente,
Like Brothers.*

*Others denote Separation ; as Apârte, Singly, or by
it or themselves ; Separadamente, Separately ; Espal-
hadamente, Scatteringly ; Apartadamente, Distinctly.*

*Adverbs of Intention, as Fortissimamente, Most strong-
ly ; Intentissimamente, Most intensively ; Com grande
cuydado, Most studiously.*

*There are some Adverbs noted for remitting, as Pou-
co á pouco, By little and little ; Passo á passo, Pe ante
pe, Pace by pace, Foot by foot ; Preguiçosamente, Idly ;
Dorminhocamente, Drowsily ; Frouxamente, Remissly.*

*Other Adverbs have a Reference to hastning ; as De-
pressa, Quickly ; Apressadamente, With all haste ; Arri-
badamente, Furiously ; Em hum abrir e fechar de ol-
hos, In the twinkle of an Eye ; Em hum instante, In
an instant ; Prestes, logo, Presently, with all speed.*

*Adverbs of Comparison and Assimilation, Assim có-
mo ; sa as Como, As ; Quasi, Almost ; Quasi nada,
Little or nothing, or as it were nothing ; Mays, More ;
Menos, Less.*

Adverbs of Choice; as *Antes*, Rather; *Malantes*,
Ter rather; *Por* *lastly*, there are *Adverbs of various Kinds*;
viz. *Doutra maneyra*, Otherwise; and several *Irregu-*
lars; as *Debalde*, In vain; *Em vão*, The same; *Atró-*
co for *Atravez*, Transversely; *Ao contrario*, On the con-
trary; *A olhos vistos*, Openly; *Ao longe*, Afar off;
Ao perto, Near; & *ao longo*, Near or by; *Ao menos*,
At least; *Ao pé de letra*, By Prescription; *Ao redor*,
About, or round about; *Ao vivo*, To the Life; *Aos*
cócuces, By the Heels; *A outro propósito*, For another
end; *De corrida*, Nimbly; *De cote*, Daily; *De cur-*
rate ou as escondidas, Privately; *De dia em dia*, From
day to day; *De gatinhas*, Creeping or crawling; *De*
cócaras, Limping; *De galope*, Leaping; *De gíolhos*,
Kneeling; *De brúcos*, Stooping or bending forward;
Davello, Transversely; *Debilmente*, Weakly or faintly;
De caminho, on or in the way, or by chance.

Next in order follow the Classes of *Prepositions*, *Conjun-*
tions, *Interjections*, *Comparisons* and *Interrogations*.

A *Preposition* is so called, because it is prefix'd to other
Words or Parts of Speech, either join'd or apart; ex. g.
Não estou em mim de cólera, I am not myself for an-
ger; and *Convém morrer antes mil vezes, do que of-*
fender á Deos levissimamente. It is a thousand times
better to die, than to offend God most lightly.

To these may be added the following *Prepositions*; as
A redor, About; *Acirca ou junto*, About or near; *De*
dentro, Within; *De fóra*, Without; *Dentro de quin-*
ze dias, Within fifteen Days; *Detraz*, Behind; *Junto*,
By; *Contra*, Against; *De fronte*, Opposite to; *Antes*
ou diante, Before; *Perto ou pegado*, Close to or by;
Por, For and by; *Abayxo*, Beneath; *Escontra*, Against;
Accerca ou pera, To; *Pouco mais ou menos*, About;
Aquém, On this side; *Para com*, Towards; *Por isso*,
Therefore; *Segundo*, junto ou depòys, According;
Até, Until; or as far as; *Emcima*, Above; *Além*,
Beyond; *Por cõusa ou junto*, Because; all which serve
the Accusative Case.

These

These that follow desire the Ablative Case; De, From; Sem, Without; As escondida, Secretly; Com, With; Em presença, Before; De longe, Far off; Ao costume, Usually; Ante, Before; Até, Until; Debayxo, Under; Em, In; Sobre, Upon.

Conjunctions are either Copulative or Disjunctive; The first join word to word; as e, and; The second parts them; as ou, or. Some are called Adversative, that by preceding seem to oppose the word; as Ainda que, Altho; Others are repeated for Collectivae, when in an Oration or Speech one thing is deduced out of another; as Portanto, Therefore; Por causa, Wherefore; Pelo que, For which reason; & logo, Wherefore.

A causal Conjunction is when in Speech a reason is given of any thing; as Porque, Because; Pela qual causa, For the which cause; Por isso, Therefore, or for this reason.

An Expletive Conjunction is that which fills up the Sense, and makes it perfect; as Na verdade, In truth, or truly; Em realidade, In reality, or really.

Prepositives are such as precede in an Oration; as ou, or; e, and; nam, not; Senam, but or except.

Subjunctives few or none, only such as are common, both preceding and following; as Portanto, Finalmente, and Na verdade.

Interjections are more properly learn'd by Use and Conversation; but it may be observ'd of the Comparatives, that when there is Occasion to enhance the Sense of a thing, they are us'd in the following manner; He mays branco que a néve, It is whiter than Snow; He mays negro que a pez, It is blacker than Pitch; He mays pegoso que o visco, It sticks faster than Birdlime; He mays doce que o mel, It is sweeter than Honey; He mays duro que o diamante, It is harder than a Diamond; He mays brábo que hum leão, He is fiercer than a Lion; He mays alçoso que os olhos de medico, It is more mattery or filthy than Physician's Eyes.

Interrogatives are as follow; Torna em ti, Return to

thy self; Que mays faria hum salto de juízo, hum hó-
mem idiota é louco? *What would a Fool do more?*
Que mayor doudice pôde aver no mundo? *What*
greater Folly can there be in the World? Que outra cou-
za faria hum salto de experiéncia e consêlho ou hum
nacido entre bêstas feras? *What more could one do that*
wants both Counsel and Experience, or one born among
Beasts? Que melhor hum Túllio? *Could Tully make*
a better Oration? Que melhor poetessaria hum Virgi-
lio? *Or Aristotle the Philosopher?* Dónde me pôde
vir mayor fer, mays de honra, riquêza e prosperidade
que de vóllo favôr? *From whence can there come to me*
more Substance, more Honour, Riches and Prosperity,
than from your Favour? Ha homem no mundo mays
desgraçado que eu? *Is there a Man in the World more*
unhappy than I? Ha homem a quem a vida seja mays
penosa? *Is there any Man whose Life can be more pain-*
ful to him? Ha homens mays ditosos e favorecidos
que chocarréyros e lisongéyros? *Are there any Men*
more happy and favoured than Hypocrites and Parasites?

*The next thing to be taken notice of, as being of especí-
al Use and Consequence, are the Genders of Nouns.*

The Genders are reputed two in this Language, i. e.
Masculine and Feminine, which are known by these Arti-
cles or Particles, both in the Singular and Plural; o, os;
ao, aos; do, dos; no, nos; a, as, ás; da, das; na,
nas.

Observe, that when the Particles o or ao precede any
Word, it is a certain Sign of the Masculine Gender and
Singular Number, and by adding of s, it is made Plural,
os, aos. So the Letter a and as for the Feminine.

Note, That the Letter a is sometimes found before a
Masculine; as Convém á Pédro, It is convenient for
Peter; António matou á Pédro, Anthony hath kill'd
Peter. Sometimes before a Feminine; as António ma-
itou á Maria; and sometimes before a Plural; as Antô-

nio matou á muiyos homens, *Anthony hath kill'd many Men.*

Note, That the Gender of the Adjective is easily known in writing, either by its Articles or its Substantive; but if the Gender of the Substantive be not known, and the Adjective end in o or a, it is certain that both are either Masculine or Feminine; as *Bizarro Homem, A gallant Man; Fermosa mulher, A beautiful Woman;* But if it terminate in any other Letter, it will be necessary to know the Gender of the Adjective by the Substantive.

Observe, that in this Language Adjectives regularly are either only of one form; as *Prudente, feliz, Prudent, happy;* or of a double Form, of which one serves the Masculine that ends in o, and the other the Feminine in a; as *Santo, Santa, Holy; Ditoso, ditosa, Happy.* I say regularly, because some Pronoun Adjectives have three Forms, Masculine, Feminine and Neuter; as *Aquella, aquella, aquillo, That, he, she, that. So Este, esse, éste, ésta, isto, isso; This, that. Where note, that the Letter e in the Neuter is turn'd into i; as Aquelle, aquillo, éste, isto, éste, isso.*

There are commonly six Rules observ'd to distinguish the Genders of Nouns Substantive by their Signification.

First, Every Noun that signifies a Masculine Gender, as all proper Names; i. e. *Manoel, Francisco, &c.* To which are referred all Angels, *Gabriel, Miguel, Rafael;* all false Gods, *Jupiter, Marte, Mercurio, Mamona, &c.* as all the Winds, *Norte, Sul, Leste, Oeste.* Likewise Nouns Appellative; v. g. *Emperador, Rey, Sacerdote, Capitan, Leão, Cavallo, Elefante; Emperor, King, Priest, Captain, Lion, Horse, Elephant.* Also the Names of Trades; as *Alfayate, a Taylor; Almocreve, a Carrier; capateyro, a Shoemaker; Taverneyro, one that keeps a Tavern.* Although sometimes they end in a; as *Mestre-sala, Mestrescola, Mochoila, &c.*

Secondly, Every Noun that signifies a Female is of the Feminine Gender, as well as proper Names; as *Maria, Anna,*

Anna, Mariána, Clára, Isabella, Helena, Ursula, Bárbara, Lusía; and false Goddesses, Júnio, Pállas, Vénus, Ceres, Vesta; also Nymphs, as Arethúsa, Climene, and Furies; as Alecro, Thesífone. As Appellatives; viz. Emperatriz, Rainha, Mulher, Sógra, Urfa; Empress, Queen, Woman, Mother-in-law, a Bear, & égoa, a Mare, and the like.

Thirdly, All Names of the Months and Rivers are Masculine; as Janeyro, Feureyro, Março, Abril, Máyo, Júnho, Julho, Agosto, Setembro, Ourubro, Novembro, Dezembro. So for Rivers; as Têjo, Tíbre, Garónna, Guadiana, Douro, &c.

4. When any Names of Islands, Provinces, Cities, Towns, Villages, Ships and Poems end in a and as, they are of the Feminine Gender; but ending in any other Letter, are Masculine. Of the first Order are Málta, Madéyra, Tercéyra, Islands, &c. Itália, França, Inglaterra, Kingdoms; Andaluzía, Estremadúra, Béyra, Provinces; Róma, Lisbóa, Lóndres, Eúora, Coímbra, Cities; Viána, Môúra, Sérpa, Villa vicósa, Towns; Santa Maria, Scylla, Chyméra, Ships; Enéida, Odysséa, Sylvia de Iysárdo, &c. Poems; excepting Lusíadas de Camões, which seems to be Masculine.

2. Of the latter Order are Islands, Píco, Córvo, Fayál, St. Miguel, &c. Cities and Towns, as Pórtó, Fáro, Macáo, Díó, Segúnto, Liórne, Lóndres, Montemór, &c. Provinces, as Brazil, Algárve, Alentéjo, &c. Ships, as Bom Jesús, Sacramento, Salvadór, Leám, &c. Poems, as Arióso, Pastór fido, and the like.

Fifthly, All Names of Trees, Fruits and Flowers ending in a, are Feminine; as Peréyra, a Pear-tree; Figuéyra, a Fig-tree; Amendoéyra, an Almond-tree; Moméyra, Macéyra, Parréyra, Murtéyra, Rósa, Açucéna, Cravelina, &c. Those that end in other Letters are Masculine; as Chóupó, Fréyxó, Peréiro, Castanhéyro, &c. a Paplar, an Ash, a Pear-tree, a Chesnut-tree, &c. So in Flowers, Crávo, a Pink or Carnation; Gyrafól, a Sun-flower, & Jasmín, &c. Except Víde,

a Vine; & Flór, a Flower, both being Feminine. The same Rule is observ'd in Fruits, Herbs, Scents, Gems, Birds, Fish, and in other Animals, ending in a, and not in other Letters, excepting Serpente, a Serpent; Sérpe, a Dragon; Adem, a Duck; Perdiz, a Partridge; Codorniz, a Quail; Noz, a Nut; which are all Feminine.

6. All Words that admit of the Masculine Articles, as o, os, aos, &c. are Masculine, tho' they end in a or as, and all that admit of the Feminine Articles; as a, as &c. are Feminine; ex. of the first, O clima, the Climate; Os enigmas, the Riddles; Aos diás, do fantasma, dos estratagemas, no poema, nos epigramas; ex. of the second, A flór, as Virtudes, as mãos.

Observations and Rules how to know and distinguish the Genders of Nouns Substantive by their Terminations.

1. **R**ULE is, that all Nouns ending in a or aa, are Feminine, whether Proper or Appellative; as Maria, Róma, França, Prop. Poesia, Villa, Música, Rosa, Mula, Egoa, Romaa, Maçaa, Avellaa, Poetry, a Town, Musick, a Rose, a Mule, a Mare, a Pomegranate, an Apple, a Small-nut. Except such Names as fall upon Men; a Marióla, a Porter; Mestrescôla, a School-master. And Surnames; as Peneyra, Madureyra, and the Word Dia, a Day; which are all Masculine, and several others derived from the Greek and Latin; as Clima, Fantasma, Poema, Epigrama, Enigma, Diadema, Dilema, Estratagema, Entimema, Cometa, Planeta. The word Cada, Every, is adapted to both Genders; as Cada homem, every Man; Cada mulher, every Woman.

2. *All Nouns ending in é are Masculine; as Proper, Dunquérque, Albuquerque; Appellatives, as Barréte, a Cap; Sinéte, a Seal; Capóte, a Cloak; Vinágre, Vinegar; Azéyte, Oil, &c. But this Rule admits of two Exceptions: First, All Names of Vertues, Vices, natural Faculties and Passions are of the Feminine Gender; ex, Virtúde, Santidáde, Bondáde, Fé; Vertue, Holiness, Goodness, Faith; & Inimizáde, Ociolidáde, Vaidáde, Menenice, Morosidáde; Enmity, Idleness, Vanity, Childishness, Moroseness; Borachisse, Vontáde, Drunkenness, Will, &c. Second Exception is, that several desperate Names of other things are of the Feminine Gender; as Idáde, velhice, rulticidáde, capacidáde, felicidadé, forte, morte, arte, parte, árvore, áve, carne, libre, fertilidáde, sede, sebe, couve, erdáde, trindáde, pouquidáde, chaminé, paréde, saúde, réde, maré, chève, trémpe, lebre, febre, serpente ou serpe, galé.*

3. *Rule is, that all Words that end in i are Masculine; as Tali, nebrí, rubí, biberiquí, quadamecí, &c.*

4. *All Words ending in o are Masculine; as Alemo, fréyxo, choupo, azinho, carro, penedo, rochedo, pão, ferro, uno, ponto, livro, crivo, crávo, pó, do, nós, béylho, &c. Except some few; as não, filhó, eyrô, ichô, mô, teyrô, ilhó, &c.*

5. *All Words ending in u are Masculine; as Bambú, perú, mû, grou, judeu, fariseu, sandeu, breu, camafeu.*

6. *Take this for a general Rule, that all Words ending in al, el, il, ol, ul, are Masculine. 1. Rosál, pinheyral, punhál, gral, except the word Cal, which is Feminine. 2. Pincel, broquel, paynel, lambel. 3. Anil, boril, gomil. 4. Lançol, caracol, rouxinol, 5. Taful, paul, baül.*

7. *All Words ending in am are Masculine; as Pam, melám, roupám, temám, colchám, cabeçám, beberám, descansám, almeyram, gaudiám, trovám, ferám, sejám; except Mam and Cozám, and several others arising from the Latin, or natural Portuguese, de-*
noting

noting *Ação*; viz. *Perfeição*, *exageração*, *composição*, *devação*, *recreação*, *declaração*, *presunção*, *perseguição*, and the like.

8. *All Words that end in em are Masculine*; as *Pêtem*, *bodém*, *armazém*, *assém*, *bem*, *homem*. *Except*, 1. *Ordem*, *desôrdem*, *trêmpem*, more properly; *trêmpe*, *Jerusalém*, *ádém*; and *Vírgem*, both *Masculine* and *Feminine*. *Except also Words ending in ágem*, being *Feminine*; viz. *Babágem*, *márgem*, *beberágem*, *fogágem*, *imágem*, *linhágem*, *terrágem*, *folhágem*, *corágem*, *romágem*, *ervágem*, *pilhágem*, *lavágem*, *lágem*, *passágem*, *viágem*, *matalotágem*; so *impígem*. *Note*, That the Word *Salvágem* is of both *Genders*, it being as proper to say *Varám salvágem*, as *Mulher salvágem*, but the Words following are *Fem.* *Babúgem*, *ferrúgem*, *lambúgem*, *rabúgem*, *penúgem*; the Word *Múgem* is *Masc.*

9. *All Words ending in im, om, um, are Masculine*; ex. g. *Motim*, *fim*, *roçim*, *bocaxim*, *espadim*, *marfim*, *fateosim*, *revelim*; so *dom*, *rom*, *tom*, *som*; also *Attum*, *bodum*, *dobrum*.

10. *All words ending in ar, er, ir, or, ur, are Masculine*: 1. *In ar*; as *açucar*, *ar*, *nêctar*, *âmbar*, *polegár*, *manjár*, *pezár*, *mar*, *calcanhár*. 2. *In er*; as *Aluanér*, *Aluguér*, *cumilhér*, *prazér*; except *Colhér*, *corculhér* e *mulhér*, which are *Feminines*. 3. *In ir*; as *Ophír*, *Guadalquebír*, & *Mártir*, which is common. 4. *In or*; as *Açór*, *caçadór*, *bemfeytór*, *lauradór*; except *flor*, *dor*, *cor*, *côr*, *sóror*, &c. 5. *In ur*, only one word occurs, which is *Catúr*.

11. *All words ending in as are Feminine*; ex. g. *Andás*, *aluíças*, *alpôndras*, *cálças*, *álças*, *fercias*, *chúpas*, *côcegas*, *tremúras*. All which are animalous, being writ in the *Plural Number*, but have a *Singular Signification*.

12. *All words ending in es, is, os, us, whether Singular or Plural, are Masculine*; v. g. *Alféres*, *dátiles*; *gis*,

gis, lis; cósidos calções, tércos da espáda, óculos, re-
lúduos; alcaçús, cuscús, abelstrús, arcabús.

13. *All words ending in az, ez, iz, oz, uz, are Masculine.* 1. In az, alcatráz, arcáz, belmáz, capatáz, mar-
váz, primáz; except Páz, which is Feminine. 2. In ez,
u. g. Mez, treméz, entreméz, arnez, peç, revéz;
except Torquéz, rez, téz, fêz, vez; which are Feminine.
3. In iz; as chafariz, matiz da pintura, verniz, cha-
mariz; except Aboiz, perdiz, cordorniz, raiz, ma-
triz, Feminine. The word Apprendiz is common to both
Genders. 4. In oz; ex. Albernóz, arróz, arrióz; ex-
cept nóz, fóz, vóz, Fem. 5. In uz; as Capúz, alca-
trúz, arcabuz, avelstrúz; except luz and cruz, which
are Fem.

Note, That all words that end in y are more or less,
as many Masculines as Feminines; as Rey, pay, boy,
Masc. & Máy, ley, grey, Fem.

Observe also that the Epicene or Promiscuous Gender is
not here wanting, expressing both Masc. and Fem. by one
word; as Púlga, piolho, mósca, mosquito, minhóca,
minhóto; for they never say Púlgo, nor piólha, nor
mósco, nor mosquita, nor minhóco, nor minhóta.

Observations of the Preterperfect Tense and Supines; as also of the Gerunds and Par- ticiples of Verbs.

THE first Rule is (which shews the Easiness of the
Portuguese Language in Comparison with the Latin
and others) that in the first Conjugation all Verbs end their
Preterperfect Tense in ey; as amo, amey; ensino, en-
finéy; levo, levéy; lávo, lavéy; forming it self, by
changing the Letter o into the Syllable ey; only this chance
happens, that where the Present Tense ends in co, the Pre-
terperfect Tense ends in quey; v. g. Fico, tiquéy, fin-
co, inquey, rónco, ronquéy, and the like. The

The second Conjugation ends all its Preterperfect Tenses in i, v. g. Léyo, li, móvo, móvi, pérco, pérdi, changing the last Letter of the third Person Singular of the Present Indicative into i; as le, li, móve, móvi, pérde, perdi, &c.

The third Rule is of the third Conjugation, that ends all its Preterperfect Tenses in i; as ouço, ouvi, méço, medí, afflijo, affligi, sinto, sinti, búlo, boli. *all which, as is before mention'd, admit of some Variety, upon the change of Letters, but such as use will make easie.*

The next thing of use will be to take notice of the Mode of Syntax, or the Composition of Speech, as is ordinary in all Languages.

Syntax or Composition of Speech admits of less Variety, and is much more easie in this than in other Languages, on account of the Particles and Articles with the Propositions prefixt, by which all Distinctions are made. The Articles are such as follow; a, á; o, ao; os, aos. To which are added the Prepositions de, da, do; des, das, dos; na, no, nas, nos; péra, em, com, sem. All which are regularly prefix'd to Nouns.

The said Articles are only prefix'd to determinate Substantives, but not to indeterminate. Example, Ténto desêjo de vos servir, I have a Desire to serve you; where the Substantive Desêjo being indeterminate, admits of no Article; but when the Substantive is determinate, an Article precedes; v. g. Pédro foy á cása de António, Peter went to Anthony his House; where Cása being a determinate Substantive, admits of the Article á.

Note, That sometimes when a Word ends in r or l, and the Articles o, os or as, follow, the r and l is changed into i; e. g. Quéro vélo, I will see it; for Quéro vero, and quéro vélos, for quéro ver os: So eu vóla dou I give it you for eu vos a dou, and eu vólas dou for eu vos as dou, &c.

What is most observable in this Syntax or Composition, is the Variety of Cases, which these Articles and Propositions govern. As for Example, the Particle á sometimes serves

serves the Nominative and the Accusative Case, as when we say a *Cáza* he *Fermósa*, the House is beautiful; which is the Nominative; and *ir á Cáza*, to go home, or to the House, which is the Accusative. The same Particle *á*, with an accent sometimes serves the Dative, and sometimes the Accusative Case; ex. g. *Convém á Cáza*, it is convenient for the House; and *Vou á Cáza*, I go home, or to the House.

The Particles *de* and *da* sometimes denote the Genitive, and sometimes the Ablative Case; ex. g. *Parte da Cáza*, part of the House, being the Genitive; and *Venho de or da Cáza de Pedro*, I come from Peter's House; which is the Ablative Case. The Preposition *Pera* sometimes is related to the Accusative, and sometimes to the Dative Case; v. g. *Vou pera Cáza*, I go home, Accus. and *Pera minha Cáza bálta isto*, this is sufficient for my House; which is the Dative Case.

Ô with an Accent is always a Sign of the Vocative Case; as *ô fermósa Cáza*, O beautiful House.

The Particles *em*, *na*, *no*, *com*, *sem*, always denote the Ablative Case in both Numbers; v. g. *Estou em Cáza*, or *na Cáza de Pedro*, I am in the House of Peter; *Estou com Cáza*, and *com armaçám*, ou *sem Cáza*, ou *sem armaçám de Pedro*; I am with, or without the House or Furniture of Peter.

As for the Particles that serve the Masculine Gender; the Particle *o* without an Accent sometimes denotes the Nominative Case; as *o Têmplo he fermóso*, and sometimes the Accusative Case; as *Vi o Têmplo fermóso*, the Church is beautiful, and I saw the beautiful Church. So the Particles *de* and *do* sometimes denote the Genitive, and sometimes the Ablative Case; as *Parte de hum Têmplo*, ou *do Têmplo*, & *venho de hum Têmplo*, ou *do Têmplo*; Part of a Church, and I come from a Church.

The Particle *ao* sometimes serves the Dative, and sometimes the Accusative Case; ex. g. *Dat. Convém ao Têmplo estar ornádo*, it is convenient that the Church

be adorned; *Accus.* Vou ao Templo da companhia, I go to the Jesuits Church. So the Particle *Pera* regularly denotes the *Accusative Case*; as Vou pera o Templo, I go to Church. Sometimes the *Dative*; as Pera Templo dos Religiosos nam basta pouco, a small matter is not enough for a Church of the Religious. *ô* with an Accent always denotes the *Vocative Case*; as ô Templo digno de veneraçam, O Church worthy of Veneration.

The Particles *em*, *no*, *com*, *sem*, are always related to the *Ablative Case*; as Estou em hum Templo ou no Templo, com Casa ou com Templo se vive bem, &c. Which Rule is likewise observ'd in the Plural as well as in the Singular Number; and this in short may be sufficient to the curious Observer for the Composition or Construction of the Portuguese Tongue, the Perfection of which depending upon this Foundation, will easily be obtained by Reading and Conversation.

Profodia.

THE last thing of Importance in this Language is the due Accent and Pronunciation of Words, which contributes much to its elegant speaking, and indeed in this, as in all other Languages, is the proper and necessary Grace.

In order to this, the Quantity of Syllables ought to be well understood whether long or short; but because in this Language only the *Pemultima's* and *Ultima's* are to be remarked for long or short, the following Rules will be more facile and easy.

In order to this it may not be amiss to mention something concerning *Diphthongs*, which are of five Orders or Combinations.

The first ends in *ae*, as *Câe*, *câetm*; also in *ay*, as *Pay*, *day*; in *ao*, as in *Pão*, *mão*; and in *au*, as in *Chua*, *páua*.

The

The second ends in ea, as Lampréa, péa; or in ey, as in Rey, ley, farey; or in eo, as Céu, véo; also in eu, as in Méu, teu, sandeu.

The third Combination is in io, as Fugio, vío.

The fourth either in oe, as Poem, dispoem; or in oy, as Boy, foy; or in ou, as Dou, grou.

The fifth either in ua, as Guarda, gualdrápa; or in ue, as Guerra, quebrár; in ui, as Guinche, guindáste; and in uo, as in Quotidiano and quóque.

As to the Quantity of Syllables, we allow not only short and long, but a kind of a third or middle Pronunciation between short and long; as in the word Cónego, which is short, and the Verb Empreço, which is of a middle sound, &c.

For the further Satisfaction in this, we may do well to follow the Order of the Vowels beginning with those Words that make their Penultima with the Vowel a, all Words ending in abo or aba, aco or aca, acho or acha, aco or acá, ado or ada, afo or afa, ago or aga, or ágem; agro, or agre; alho or alha; alo or ala, have all their Penultima's long. Example in order, viz. Diábo, the Devil; Mangába, an Indian Fruit; Macáco, macáca, an Ape; Madráco, a Knave; Linháca, Hempseed; Mingácho, garinácha; Amádo, punháda (except Levado & cágado, which are short in the Penultima) Abábo, abáfa; Saramágo, adága, tanchágem; (except Estámago, amágo, which are short) Cigálho, roálha; Badálo, bengálo, (except escándalo, which is short) and some others derived from the Latin.

2. Rule is, that Words ending in Anho or ama, Anho or anha, Ano or ana, have their Penultima of a middle Sound or Pronunciation; ex. g. Escámo, couráma, gadánho, piánha, mundáno, mundána, engáno, engána, (except Canhamo, bigamo, píramo, priamo, and the like, borrowed from the Greek, which are short) Amámos and eufinámos are long; but Pámpano and rympano are short.

3. Rule is, that Words ending in apo, apa; aque; aro, ara; have their Penultima long; ex. g. Guardanapo, solapa, basbaque, almadraque, empáro, çafára; except these that follow, Cântaro, púcaro, lâparo, târaro, búfaro, lúparo, píparo, pícaro, tuffaro, comaro, târtara, câmera, tâmara, sóvaro, pássaro, lázaro, bárbaro, janízaro, esquíزارo, which are short, &c.

4. Rule is, that Words ending in arro, arta; ato, ata; avo, ava; axo, axa; azo, aza; make the Penultima long; ex. g. bizárro, bizarra, esfolagáto, malagáta, escrávo, elcráva, (excepting Cóncavo and Bisavo, which are short) Encáza, cartáxo, desázo, desáza, &c.

The Order of Words that make their Penultima by the Vowel é.

1. Rule, All Words that end in ebo, eba, edo, eda, efo, efa; have a kind of middle Pronunciation, something near being long; but such as end in echo, echa, and eco, eca, are altogether long; ex. g. Mançébo, a Youth; Mançéba, a Concubine; Conçédo, azéda, enrédo, borréfo ou borréfa, a Bird without Feathers; excepting Azédo, azedas, azéda, arremédo, arreméda, arrédo, arréda, which are all long.

2. Rule is such as end in efe are long; as Tabéfe, Milk thickned with Eggs; and Magaréfe, caréfa. Words ending in echo, echa, eco, eça, are long; as Esméchio, esmécha, marréco, bonéca. Words that end in eço and eça have a middle Pronunciation; as coméço, arreméço, cabéça, Nouns; adornéço, amaduréço, Verbs; except Coméço, arreméço, empéço, Verbs, which are long.

3. Rule is, that Words ending in ego have a kind of middle Pronunciation; as Morçégo, socégo, relégo, gallego; except Cónego, trásego, soffregó, pécego, follégo, córrego, which are short; Entrégo, entréga, esfrégo, esfrega, traségo, traséga, allégo, alléga & empte-go, the Verb, all are long; but the Noun Emprégo follows

shows the general Rule. Bátega and Cócega are short.

Words ending in ejo and eja ; as Bocéjo, bocéja, cran-guéjo, admit a middle Accent ; but Alentéjo, envéjo, envéja are long. Others ending in elo, ela, are long ; as Martélo, murzélo, marmélo, queréla, barbélia de boy ; except Ourelo, bebélo and vertélo, which are middle.

Words ending in Emo, ema, eno, ena, middle ; as Suprémo, postréma, diadéma, acéno ; Antéma, açu-céna ; Ingréme, short. Others that end in epo, epa, epe and eque, ero, era, long ; as decépo, decépa, ca-répa, julépe, moléque, espéro, espéra, severo, severo, sévera ; except próspéro, áspero, which are short ; and the Noun Tempéro, which is middle.

4. Rule is, that Words ending in Eso, esa, eto, eta, ete, evo, eva, and eve challenge a middle Accent ; as Desprésó, grandésa, lindésa ; except the Verbs Des-présó, desprésa, and the like, which are truly long. Carapéta, galhéta, ramalhéta, boféte, middle ; except gruméte, topéte, boféte, prométe, compéte, acométe, arreméte, &c. which are long. Atrévo, atréva, atréve, middle ; entrévo, entréva, entréve, encévo, encéva, long, and the like.

Rules for the Penultima made by the Letter i.

1. All Words ending in ibo, iba, ibe, icho, icha, iche, ico, ica, iço, iça, ice, ido, ida, ifo, ifa, ife, make their Penultima's long ; ex. g. arribo, arriba, abibe ; Esqui-cho, esguicha, azeviche, massárico, botica ; except Agarico, mecánico, ecuménico, crítico, and the like, borrowed from the Greek and Latin, which are long. Examples of Words ending in ico, iça, ice, are Reliço, preguica, velhice. Others in ido, ida, marido, medi-da ; except Húmido, pálido, torrido, horrído, and the like ; which arising from the Latin, are short. Others in ifo, ifa, ife ; as Borrífo, alcatífa, patife ; except Apócrifo, which with some others, flowing from the Latin, is short.

2. Word

2. Words ending in *igo* and *iga* are long; as *Amigo*, *amiga*; *Obrigo*, *obriga*; except *Pródigo*, *pródiga*. Others ending in *ijo* and *ija*; as *Montijo*, *artemija*. Others in *ilho* and *ilha*; as *Atilha*, *beatilha*. Others end in *ilo*, *ila*, *ile*; as *Gorgomilo*, *mamila*, *opila*; excepting *Ypsylo* and *Tótila*, which are short in the Penultima.

3. Words ending in *imo*, *ima*, have the Penultima long; as *Cadimo*, *esgrima*; except *ínhimo*, *ínhima*, *ánimo*, *Jerónimo*, *icónimo*, *íntimo*, *máximo*, *péssimo*, and the like deriv'd from the Latin, have their Penultima short. Others are long that end in *inho*, *inha*; as *Moinho*, *asinha*. Others are long that end in *ino*, *ina*; as *Menino*, *menina*. Some in *ipo*, *ipa*, *ipe*; as *Qualdipo*, *qualdipa*, *acepípe*. Others in *iquo*, *iqua*, *ique*; as *Iníquo*, *iníqua*, *lambíque*: And some end in *iro*, *ira*, *ire*; as *Retiro*, *mentíra*, *suspíre*, &c.

4. Words ending in *iso*, *isa*, or *izo*, *iza*; *ito*, *ita*, are long in the Penultima; v. g. *Avíso*, *camísa*, *juízo*, *ogeríza*, *cabríto*, *maldita*; except *Púlpito*, *vomíto*, *decrepíto*, *espiríto*; and the like having Affinity with the Latin are short: And such as end in *ivo*, *iva*, and *ixo*, *ixa*, are long; ex. g. *Altívo*, *altíva*; *prolíxo*, *prolíxa*.

Rules for such Words as make their Penultima in o.

1. Such Words as end in *obo*, *oba*, *obe*, have a middle Accent; as *Lóbo*, *lóba*; *arróba*, *alcóba*; *arróbe*, *adóbe*; except *Glóbo*, and the Verb *Arróbo*, *arróba*, which are long. Except also such; as *Súccobo*, *inco-bo*, *súccoba*, that are short. Words ending in *obro*, *obra*, *obte*, are long; as *ôbro*, *ôbra*; *recôbro*, *recôbra*, *côbre*; *côbro* and *dôbro*, are allowed a middle Accent; as *pôr em côbro*, *pagár em dôbro*.

2. Words ending in *ocho*, *ocha*; *oco*, *oca*; *odo*, *oda*, *ode*; and in *oso*, *osa*, *ote*, make the Penultima with a middle Accent; ex. g. *Arrócho*, *marrócho*, *marrócha*; except some that make their Penultima long;

as *Garrocha, carôcha, and so in the following Verbs, Arrôcho, arrôcha; agarrôcho, agarrôcha; atôcho, atôcha; abrocho, abrocha.*

Examples in oco and oca; as Biôco, marzóco, marzóca; tinôco, tinôca: Except some that are long; as Massarôca, mandiôca, minhôca, bichôca.

Examples of such as end in oço and oça; as Almôço, môça. Such as are long are excepted; as Verb Almôço, almôça, and the Noun Môco; and the Verb Remôço, remôça, carrôça.

Examples in odo, oda, ode; as Angôdo, vôda, pôde; the Verbs that are long are excepted; as Engôdo, engôda, pôde.

Examples of such as end in ofo, ofa, ofe; v. g. Estôfo, a Noun, which signifies that which crams, or fills, or gorges; and Estôfa, which is also a Noun, as when we say, Homem de báixa estôfa; a Man of a mean Condition. The Verbs are excepted, which are long; as Estôfo, estôfa; galhôfa and bôfe. Sóffro and enxôfre are reputed of a middle Pronunciation, but Alcachôfra and the Verbs Enxôfro and enxôfra make the Penultima long.

3. *Words ending in ofro, ofra, ofre, are long; as Chôfro, alcachôfra, chôfre, côfre; the Verb Sófro, sófra, is short.*

Some Words ending in ogo, oga, ogue, are long; as Affôgo, affôga, affôgue: So Desafôgo, desafôga, desafôgue, only the Nouns Desafôgo and Fôgo seem to incline to a Medium in Pronunciation.

Examples in the Terminations ojo, oja, are as follow; Antôjo, antôja; anôjo, anôja; despôjo, despôja, &c. being Verbs; the Nouns following are allow'd a middle Accent; as Antôjo, nójo, despôjo, bójo, manôjo. Some end in ôlo, ôla, ôle, which are long; v. g. Bôlo, esfôlo, esfôla, esfôle; engôle, viôla, gallinhôla. Some Exceptions are here made of some Words that admit of a middle Accent; ex. g. Miôlo, bólo, rebôlo de barbeyro, tôlo, tôla, cebôla; excepting Pirola and Frívolo being both short.

Examples

Examples of Words that end in Omo, oma, ome, being of a middle Proportion are as follow; Mordômo, arredôma, Jubusôme; here is excepted the Word atomo, which is short.

Others ending in onho and onha, the same; as Bisôinho, bisôinha; risôinho, risôinha, and so of those that end in ono and ona; as Dôno, atafôna, mangerôna, only the Word Dôna hath its Penultima long.

4. That Words ending in opla, opo, opa, ope; opro, opra, opre, and in oque have their Penultima long; v.g. Manôpla, sinôpla; tôpo, tôpa, tôpe; galôpe; ifôpe. Except some few that demand a middle Pronunciation; as Tôpo da escada, lôpo, lôpa, cachôpo.

Examples of Words ending in opro, opra, opre, in the Verb Assôpro, assôpra, assôpre; except the Noun Assôpro, which requires the middle Accent; for such as end in oque, tôquembôque and botôque, may serve for an Example.

5. All Words that end in oro, ora, ore, are long in the Penultima; v. g. Penhôro, penhóra, penhóre; except Bâcoro, bâcora, âncora; Bârbora, Evora, Tâvora, rémora, pólvora, árvore, abóbora, fóro, fóro, côro, gôro, ôvo, chôro, which are all short.

1. All Words ending in orro, orra, demand the middle Accent; as Socôrrro, locôrra; môrrro, môrrra; cachôrrro, cachôrrra.

2. All Words ending in oso, osa, or ozo, oza, are the same; v. g. Espôso, spôsa; rapôzo, rapôza: Also Primorôso, manhôso, indutrióso, of which the Femines are long; as Primorôsa, manhôsa, indutriósa. Words ending in ole are long; as Descôse, despôse, &c.

3. Words ending in oto, ota, require a middle Accent; as Gôto, gôta; bôta, gayvôta; embôto, embôta; devôto, devôto; frôta, fôta, côta; marlôta in ote long; as Garrôte, galeôte: matalôte, capôte.

Examples of Words ending in ovo, ova, of a middle Accent; as Renôvo, recôvo, ôvo, elcôva, cortôva; except some Verbs that are long in the Penultima; as Re-

nôvo, desôvo; renôva, desôva; and the Nouns Nôva, cova, sova. As also the Verbs ending in ove; as Renôve, aprôve, &c.

Examples of Words ending in oxo, oxa, of a middle Accent, are Rôxo, rôxa, pintarôxa, barbarôxa, &c.

Note, That several Words in this Language that make their Penultima's in o are pronounced long in the Plural, and not in the Singular Number; ex. g. Pôvo, pôvos; pôrco, pôrcos; ôvo, ôvos; nôvo, nôvos; rôgo, rôgos; fôgo, fôgos; jôgo, jôgos; ôlho, ôlhos; côrvo, côrvos; fôrno, fôrnos; tôrno, tôrnos; côrno, côrnos; sôno, sônos; pômo, pômos; trôno, trônos; lôdo, lôdos; lôbo, lôbos; bôlo, bôlos; môno, mônos; mômo, mômos.

Rules for Words that make their Penultima by the Vowel u.

All Words that end in ubo, uba; ubro, ubra; ucho, ucha; uco, uca; uço, uça; make their Penultima long. Examples follow; Encúbo, encúba; adúbo, adúba; except Succubo, incubo, and any others that come from the Latin, with a Penultima short.

Examples in ubro, ubra, are encúbro, encúbra; descúbro, descúbra; embúcho, embúcha; eunúco, abojarúco or melharúco, cadúco, cadúca; so rebúço, embúço, embúça.

2. All Words ending in udo, uda, ude; ufo, ufa, ufe; ugo, uga, uge; and ujo, uja, have the Penultima long; ex. g. Sanhúdo, sanhúda; felpúdo, felpúda; meúda, almúde; so Pantúfo, adúfa, estúfa, adúfe. In the same manner, Enrúgo, enrúga; seramúgo, sanguesúga; and caramújo, cornúja.

3. That all Words ending in ulho, ulha, ulhe; ulo, ula, ule; umo, uma, ime; and unho, unha, unhe, have their Penultima long, as appears by the following Examples, Bagúlho, burbúlha; entúlho, entúlha, entúlhe;

túlhe: So Engúlo, engúla, bulebúle, except here the Word Vocábulo, and others of a Latin Descent; as Thuríbulo, vestibulo, ángulo, régulo, ámbula, trémula, and the like, which are short. Others follow the general Rule; as Consúmo, consúma; ciúme, cardúme; and caramúnha, empúnho, empúnha, empúnhe.

4. That all Words ending in uno, una, une; upo, upa, upe; uque, and uro, ura, ure, are long in the Penultima; ex. g. Desúno, desúna, desúne, apúpo, apúpa, apúpe; estúque, trugue, dúque; pendúro, pendúra, pendúre; ventúra, fermosúra, &c.

5. That Words ending in uso, usa, use; or uzo, uza, uze; in uto, uta, ute; uxó, uxa, uxe; or in uvo, uva, are long in the Penultima; ex. g. the Noun Perafúso, and the Verb Perafúso, perafúsa, perafúse. So Labúto, labúta, labúte; condúto, condúta; except the Word Cómputo, and others of a Latin Race, which are short. Others belong to the general Rule; as empúxo, empúxa, empúxe, cartuxo; viúvo, viúva, abútre.

Next follow some Observations of Penultima's before other Vowels.

1. Of a before other Vowels; as for Example, a before e and i. is short, or at least of a middle Pronunciation; ex. g. Sae, cae, sair, cair, but before ó is long; as in Bacalháo, varapáo, berimbáo, babáo; except Dápaó, which is short. And the third Person Singular of the Indicative Mood, when the Particle o is added; as when we say Cómáó, bebéó; before u, it seems to sound long in the Word Baúl, but short in the Word Paúl; for the rest the ear must be consulted, only take notice that a before y sounds long, as in Enláyo, alháya.

2. Of the Pronunciation and Accent of e before other Vowels, e before a bath a middle Sound in the following Words; Alcatea, balea, ferropea, but sounds long in Amalthéa, garhotéa, symbléa, idéa, galathéa. It sounds

short in *Gavea* and *Boreas*, and in the third Persons of the Imperative Mood, when the Letter *a* is annexed; as *mátea*; before *o* it sounds long, as in *Chapéo*, *coruchéo*, the Word *páteo* is excepted. And in the said third Persons when the Letter *o* is subjoined; as *Máteo*, &c. Also in the Words *Fêmea*, *fêmeas*, *reicórea*, *chicórea*, and many others that we borrow from the Latin. But not so before the Letter *u*, for then both the Vowels melt into a Diphthong, giving a distinct Sound of each; as in *Corifeu*, *sandedu*, &c.

3. Of the Vowel *i* before the rest, and its proper Accent before *a*, *e*, *o*, it is long; ex. g. in the Verbs before *a*, *Dizíá*, *fazíá*, *queríá*, and in the Nouns *Azevíá*, *almotolíá*, *algaravíá*. Excepting such as are borrowed from the Latin; as *Sábíá*, *néscíá*, *comédia*, *fériá*, *sciéntíá*, *prudência*, &c. *i* before *o* sounds long; v. g. *Desvíó* &c. before *e*; as *Desvíe*, *envíe*, *envío*; except *espécíá*, *vício*, and the like, which use will discover.

4. Is of *o*, before the rest; and first before *a* it is allowed the middle Accent, as in the Words *Coróá*, *zambóá*, *tóá*, *móá*, *esmóá*; and so before *e* in the Word *Sôe* it is long, signifying he is want but in the said Word *Sôe* let him sound, it is of the middle tone; in the Words *Dóe*, *inôe*, *rôe*, it is long. *O* before *i* is hardly perceivable as to its Sound, but however reputed to be short, as in the Words *Rói*, *poi*, &c. neither is it found before *u*, but in Diphthongs, as in the Verbs *Andóu*, *obróu*, &c.

5. and last Rule of the Penultima's is of the Vowel *u*, before the rest; and first *u* before *a* is long; as in *rúá*, *charrúá*, *perúá*; except *Mellíflua*, *cápuá*, *pápuá*, *ínsua*. This Vowel before *e* and *o* is long; as in *Conclúo*, *recúo*; *conclúe*, *recúe*. And so it is before the Vowel *i*, as in the Word *Conclúi*; the said Vowel *u* sounding always, but in Words of a Latin Strain; as *Mellíflua*, &c.

The last thing that relates to the due Pronunciation of the Portuguese Tongue is the Accent or Tone of the last Syllable of every Word, ending either in a Vowel or Consonant; and first of such as end in a Vowel, which follow in order.

The

The first Rule is this, that all Words that end in the Vowel, a, make the last Syllable short; ex. g. Cása, práça, cónsua, lóuza, áma, téyma, rópua, práta, and the like, being Nouns. The same Rule takes place in Verbs; as Enlína, díga, cólha, escólha; excepting some that make the last Syllable long; as Fafetá, bofetá, calambá, e-gramá, maná, cá, lá, atolá, ouxalá, pá, Pará; the same is observable also in Verbs; as vá, itá, ellá, and in the third Persons of the Singular Number and Future Tense of the Indicative Mood; v. g. Amará, ensinará, lerá, ouvirá, andaré, gozaré, riré, and the like; but the Diphthong aa is pronounced with a kind of a middle Tone or Sound; as Imáa and maçaá.

2. Of Words that end in e, and make the last Syllable short; as Tigre, folle, pódre, ódre, alpendre, pódre, mádre, fráde; the same also appears in some Persons of certain Verbs; v. g. Sófre, descóbre, encóbre, presume, enxúgue, cure, procure, lógre, and the like.

This Rule admits of some Exceptions as in the following Examples; Rosieré, galé, polé, poté, maré, aguapé, carizé, buscapé, chaminé, guiné, loulé, bujamé, fé, fé, pé, ré, pontapé, relé.

3. That all Words ending in i make their last Syllable long; as Biberequi, robí, carnesí, guadanésí. Also some Adverbs of Place; as Alí, lóquí, dali, petalí; so it falls out in Verbs in all those Persons that end in i; ex. g. Boli, ouvi, inoví, ví, lí, fí, &c. neither is there any Exception found, unless it be in the Word Uodí, which is the Name of a foreign City. A far different Sound have those Words that end in y, making a Diphthong ay, ey, oy, uy; v. g. amáy, pay; faréy, ley; boy, foy; ruy, fuy.

4. That most Words ending in o, regularly make the last Syllable short; ex. g. the Nouns Páno, dâno, ma-gáno, ámo, caválo, camínho, desvío, atálho, tráfáho, mácho, empácho, princípio, &c. so in the following Verbs; Ando, ensino, aprendo, coméço, ador-méço, engrandéço.

Several Words are excepted in this Rule; v. g. Avó, enxô, ichô, eyrô, teyrô, lilhô, beylhô, dô, nô, pô, mô, fô, lô; as *pam de lô*, and the Mariners have a Saying when they sail against the Wind, *Metêr de lô*.

5. That Words ending in the last Vowel *u* are generally long in the last Syllable; as *Bambú, Perú, nú, crú, mú, tú, Pegú, Bersebú, &c.* Excepting such Words as have another Vowel antecedent to the *u*; for then by forming a Diphthong the Sound is different in the Pronunciation; v. g. *Sandêu, judêu, patalôu, amôu, levôu.*

Next follow some Rules for the Pronunciation of the last Syllable in Words that are terminated by one of the five Consonants *l, m, r, s, z*, made into Syllables by a Combination of the five Vowels; As first, *Al, el, il, ol, ul.* Secondly, *Am, em, im, om, um.* Thirdly, *As, er, ir, or, ur.* Fourthly, *As, es, is, os, us.* Fifthly, *Az, ez, iz, oz, uz.*

1. That all Words in *al* are pronounced long; ex. g. *Grál, jográl, punhál, curiál, pinheyrál, bocál de póço, mazorral, zorzál, animál, réal.* Here is one Word excepted, which seems to have a kind of a middle Sound in the Pronunciation, which is *Setúval*.

2. Most Words ending in *el*, are pronounced long in the last; *Almotacél, coronél, forriél, lambél, maynél, paynél, pincél, granél*; except some which seem to be short; as *Louvável, agradável, applausível, cível, visível, audível, amável, vituperável, &c.*

3. Words ending in *il* are long; as *aníl, esmiríl, gentíl, quadríl, boríl, ceytíl*; except *Dócil, fácil, hábil*, and the like derived from the Latin.

4. That all Words ending in *ol* are long; as *Reynól, caracól, lençól, ourinól, payól.*

5. The same are Words that end in *ul*; as *Tafúl, paúl, fál, azúl*; excepting *Cónsul*, which seems to be short.

Rules of the Second Combination ending in m.

1. *All Words being Nouns, and ending in am, are pronounced long like á long in the last Syllable; ex. g. Calçám, podám, botám, ouçám, descansám, toítám, borram.* I say, being Nouns, because in Verbs the third Persons of the Present Tense and Plural Number are short; as Calçam, pódam, bótam, ouçam, descánsam, tóítam, bórram. So likewise in the third Persons Plural of the Imperfect, Preterperfect, and Preterpluperfect; as Amávam, liam, ouviam, and Amáram, lerám, ouvíram, escrevéram, ensináram. But the third Person Plural of the Future Indicative is short; v. g. Amarám, lerám, ouvíram, ensinarám, escreverám.

2. *Words ending in em make the last Syllable short; ex. g. in Nouns; as Ordem, péntem, viagem, omenágem, ranchágem, plumágem; So in Verbs; as Amem, íem, lérem; ensinem, ensinarém; ouvem, ouvírem. Except some Nouns which are long, viz. Dédém, bedém, assém, parabém, rebém de comitre. As also the Verb têm, with its Compounds; as mantém, detém, retém, contém; with the Words Aquém, além, porém.*

3. *All Portuguese Words ending in im are long in the last Syllables; as Rocím, jasmím, chapím, thelím, fraldelím, guádamecím, rubím, amím, pasquím, motím, beleguím, sim, malím, bocaxím, borzeguím, sim, malím, bocaxím: And so in proper Names; as Chím, Mondím, &c.*

4. *Words ending in om and um are also long; as bóm, dómi, róm, tóm, sóm, and dobrúm, atúm, bódúm, jejúm, nenhúm.*

Rules of the third Combination in r.

1. *All Words ending in ar are long in the last Syllable; as Pomár, aziár, rozalgár, már, preamár. So in the*

the Infinitives Amár, ensinár, adorár, recreár, venerár; except Açúcar, néctar, aljófar, âmbar, and the like, derived from the Latin.

2. That Words ending in er are also pronounced long in the last Syllable; as Mulhér, colhér, corculhér. Also in Verbs of the second Conjugation in the future of the Subjunctive; as Como eu quizer, fizér, ouvér. Excepting Como eu ler, and the Infinitives of the second Conjugation; as Padeçér, escrevér, morrér, ler, which seem to admit of a middle kind of Pronunciation.

3. That all Words that end in ir are accented long in the last Syllable; Verbs in this Nature are very copious in the Infinitive Mood of the third Conjugation; v. g. Partir, quair, nir, pedir, tussir, esgrimir; ophir, qualquebir; except the Word Mártir borrow'd from the Greek and Latin.

4. Words ending in or have a middle kind of Pronunciation between short and long; as Penhór, dor, cor, flor, andór, louvór, lavór, humór, resplandór, pendór, lamór, senhór. Also the Infinitive of the Verb Por, and its Compounds; as antepór, compór, entepór, expór, despór, contrapór, repór, propór.

Some Nouns are excepted that have a long Accent; as Cór, melhór, peyór, mayór ou mór.

5. Very few Portuguese Words end in ur, but those that do sound long; as Catúr, assúr.

Notes of the fourth Conjugation in the Letter A.

1. All Words ending in as, being Nouns, as to their Pronunciation in the Plural Number, imitate the Singular; if short in the Singular, 'tis so in the Plural; as Cása, cásas; práça, práças; córsa, córsas; lóurza, lóurzas; áma, ámas; téyma, téymas; roupa, roupas; and if long in the Singular, they are the same in the Plural; as Tafetá, tafetás; bofetá, bofetás; calambá, calambás; eyramá, eyramás; maná, manás. Note, That the Particle as without an Accent is short; viz.

as

as Cásas de Antonio, *but with an Accent sounds long*; viz. Vou ás cásas de Antonio.

This Rule is also applicable to Verbs; for if the last Syllable of the first Person of any Verb (whatever Letter it end in) be short, the last Syllable of the Second Person will be the same; v. g. Amo, ámas; amáva, amávas; ensino, ensinas; enímáva, eninávas.

In the same manner, if the last Syllable of the first Person be long, the last of the second will be the same; Example in the Future of the Indicative Mood; Amaréy, amarás; enlinaréy, enlinarás; leréy, lerás: *So are vás and das the second Person Present Indicative of the Verbs vou and dou, and faz and traz; the third Person of the Verbs faço and trágo; the Conjunction mas, and the Preposition das are short.*

2. All Nouns ending in *es* in the Plural Number, which in the Singular have *e* short, are likewise short in the Plural; v. g. Tigre, tígres; tolle, tollés; pódre, pódrés; ódre, ódrés; alpendre, alpendrés; pádre, pádrés; mádre, mádrés; fráde, frádes.

In the same manner follow Examples of long Terminations both in the Singular and Plural Numbers, viz. Galé, galés; polé, polés; maré, marés; aguapé, aguapés; chaminé, chaminés, and the like.

Note, That such Names which in the Singular Number end in *az, ez, iz, oz, uz*, make the Plural in *es* short; v. g. Lambáz, lambázes; torquéz, torquézes; codorniz, codornizes; cadóz, cadózes; carafúz, carafúzes.

Observe the Syllable *es* in Verbs of the second and third Conjugation, and the second Person Present of the Indicative Mood is short; viz. Escreves, les, moves, ênches; tósses, ouves, gáñnes, only the second Person of the Verb Sou, being *es*, is long.

3. Nouns ending in *i* make the last Syllable long; as in Luíz, verníz, almojarís, gís; but because these have their Terminations more properly in *iz*, an Example may be added of such Words which in the Singular Number end in *i*, and in the Plural in *iys*, both long; as robí, robíys; bíys;

biys; biberequí; biberequíys: So the second Person Plural of the Present Indicative of the Verb *Ouço*, which is *Ouviys*, and the same in several other Verbs of the third Conjugation. Here are excepted as short several Words that end in *ays*, *eys*, *oys*, *uys*, as the Nouns *Cáys*, *arráys*, *reys*, *leys*; *caracoys*, *róys*; *panys*, *azúys*; and the Verbs *Amays*, *enfinays*; *direys*, *fareys*.

4. All Words ending in *os* in the Plural Number when the Singular ends in *o*, and is short, the Plural is the same; and if the Singular be long with that Termination, the Plural is the same; as for instance in both, *Pámo*, *pámos*; *rámo*, *rámos*; *cámo*, *cámos*; *filho*, *filhos*; *Ráyo*, *ráyo*s. So the long, *Eyrô*, *eyrô*s; *tiñô*, *tiñô*s; *mô*, *mô*s; *enxô*, *enxô*s.

To mention Verbs, all their Persons ending in *os*, such as are the first of the Plural Number in all the Tenses make the last Syllable short; as *Amámos*, *amávamos*; *amémós*, *amáramós*; *amariámos*, *amássemos*; *lémós*, *léramós*; *lerémós*, *leríramós*, *léssemos*; *ouvímós*, *ouvíamós*, *ouvírmós*, *ouvíramós*, *ouvírémos*, *ouvíriámos*, *ouvíssemos*, and so of the rest.

5. That all Portuguese Nouns ending in *us*, in the Plural Number are long, having the Singular terminated by *u*, which is long likewise; v. g. *Bambú*, *bambús*; *peru*, *perús*; *nu*, *nús*; *crú*, *crús*.

Such Words are excepted, as admit another Vowel before *u*, and making a Diphthong, produce a different Sound in the Pronunciation; as *Judéu*, *judéus*; *landéu*, *landéus*; *pataléu*, *pataléus*.

There are very few Portuguese Words that naturally end in *us*, but rather in *uz*, as Examples of the following Rules will intimate.

Rules of the fifth and last Combination with the Letter *z*.

1. The first Rule is, that all Words ending in *az*, make the last Syllable long; v. g. *Rapáz*, *arganá*z, *belmáz*, *goráz*, *lambáz*, *capáz*, *capatáz*, *marruáz*.

2. Rule

2. Rule, that all Words ending in *ez* allow a middle Accent in the last Syllable; as *Torquéz, endéz, xadréz, véz, méz, péz*, and the like in Proper Names; as *Braguéz, Milanéz, Françez, Aragonéz, Portuguéz, Ingréz, Irlandéz, &c.* except these that are long; as *féz, déz, envéz, viéz, convéz, garoupéz, travéz, revéz*.

3. Rule is, that all Words ending in *iz* are long in the last Syllable; as *Aboíz, codorníz, chamaríz, chafaríz, almofaríz, naríz, matríz*.

Some pronounce the Word *Appéndiz* short.

4. Rule, all Words ending in *oz* are long; as *Nóz, pióz, cadóz, corcóz, albernóz, algeróz, arrióz, feróz*; some except *Arróz, algóz, oríza* and *carnífex*, as having a kind of middle Accent in Pronunciation.

5. Rule is, That Words ending in *uz* are likewise pronounced long in the last Syllable; v. g. *Alcatruz, capúz, avelstrúz, alcaçúz, arcabúz, carafúz, lúz, trúz, Ormúz*.

Among the Verbs likewise are found Examples of Persons that end in *uz*, which is the first Person of the Preterfect Tense of the Singular Number of the Verb *Pônho* and its Compounds, which are all long; ex. g. *púz, compúz, propúz, repúz, entrepúz, oppúz, depúz, antepúz, expúz, contrapúz, diispúz, &c.*

And this seems to me sufficient for a compendious Instruction how to be Master of the common Use and Elegance of the Portuguese Tongue, leaving the rest to the diligent Observer in his Conversation and Reading.

THE last thing of Use to be mentioned in the Portuguese is concerning its Orthography to prevent many gross Absurdities that are often discovered, even amongst the most knowing of the Natives themselves, and would appear very ridiculous in a Stranger that would pretend to Curiosity in this or any other Language.

In order to this, observe these following Rules.

First,

First, *All Proper Names and Surnames, or Relatives deriv'd from Appellatives, are written with a great Character in the beginning; viz. Lourenço, Lóbo, Maria da Sylva. As also all Proper Names of Kingdoms, Provinces, Cities, Towns, Mountains, Rivers, Fountains, Months of the Year, Names of the Heathen Gods and Goddesses, &c. as Portugál, Andaluzia, Lisbóa, Madríd, Olympo, Têjo, Arethúsa, Janeyro. Júpiter, Vénus, &c. So also of Adjectives; as Romano, Lusitano, Inglês, Francês, and Appellatives of any great Dignity, as of a King or Emperor, and the beginning of every Chapter or Section, and after every final Period.*

2. *Rule is, that no Portuguese Word either begins or ends with a double Consonant; as RRey, SSaude, or Quall, &c. because the Sound of the last Consonant is intirely lost.*

3. *Rule is concerning the Letter m or n; v. g. m is always written before b, p, m; as Embravecér, immóvel, impár. The Letter n is always written before c, d, f, g, l, n, r, s, t; ex. g. Trôncó, pôndo, confio, angústia, enleáo, ámmo, enregeláo, intinuáo, enteláo. Except the Compounds of the Adverb Bem and Circum; as Bemestreado, bemquisto, circumferência, circumflexo; besides Comigo, comtigo, comfigo.*

4. *Rule is concerning Abbreviations, which are familiar in the Portuguese Language, which is first observable in the Particle til as they call it; v. g. for Sentença, Gonçalves, Fernández, Martins, Rodriguez, they write abbreviated, Snça, Glz, Frz, Míz, Roíz.*

They likewise use Abbreviations without the til, and more frequently; v. g. Vossa Mageliáde, V. Mag. Vossa Alteza, V. A. Vossa Excellência, V. E. Vossa Senhoria, V. S. Vossa Mercê, V. M. El Rey Nosso Senhor, El. R. N. S. Author, A. a Plaintiff in Law Réo, R. the Defendant. All which are written with great Characters.

5. *Rule is concerning Pauses which enter into the Elegancies of Writing and Pronunciation; and the first is that*

that of the Point call'd a (Comma) which is us'd both for a Distinction of what we write, and in Discourse to give a little Ease for Respiration. The most frequent Use of it is after a Verb with its Cases, at the end of every little Clause; v. g. Quem ama á Déos, ama o próximo; He that loves God, loves his Neighbour. It is also placed after a Conjunction before a Relative; viz. Aquêlle he verdadeyramente prudente, e sábio, que de todo seu coração honra á Déos; He is truly prudent and wise that serves God with all his Heart. It hath also its place before Adjectives when many occur in the same Case; v. g. Quem quizer ser verdadeyramente nôbre, deve ser bom, prudente, constante, liberal; He that designs to be truly noble, ought to be good, prudent, constant and liberal.

Also before Substantives; viz. As virtúdes moráys sam quátro, Prudência, Justiça, Temperança, Fortaleza; The moral Virtues are Four; viz, Prudence, Justice, Temperance and Fortitude.

It is also us'd after simple Verbs without any Case; ex. g. Pequéy, cuydando, fallando, obrando; I was to blame, thinking, speaking, working.

But the greatest Difficulty is to explain the Difference between the perfect and imperfect Colon, the imperfect being a Point with a Dash at the bottom (;) the perfect hath two Points, as (:)

The first is used when a Sentence is imperfect; as for Example, Antigamente ignoréy; más agora, conhêço; I was formerly ignorant, but now I know.

It also takes place between Verbs and contrary Sentences; viz. Muyto distam carregár; descarregár; alegrárse; entristecerse; There is a great deal of Difference between charging and discharging, being merry, cheerful.

As to the perfect Colon, which consists of two Points, it is used when a Sentence renders the Sense perfect; so that the Difference is easily perceiv'd.

The perfect Colon is likewise used when we quote the Words of any Author; ex. g. Dizia Horacio: Nenhuma

húma couza he de todo perfeita ; Horace said : Nothing in every part is perfect. In the same manner, when we promise to say any thing ; viz. Diréy ao que me maldicoar : Húyve como lóbo : más nam me mórda como cárn. I shall say to him that speaks ill of me : Howl like a Wolf ; but bite me not like a Dog.

6. Rule relates to the Sign of a Period, Interrogation, Admiration, and a Parenthesis.

The first is known by a single Point, and is used when the Sentence and Sence is fully consummated ; of which an easie Observation will fully inform you.

The Interrogatory Sign hath this Mark (?), and is us'd upon all Questions ; v. g. Se conhêces a tantos, porque a ti méimo nam sabes ? If thou know'st so many, why dost thou not know thy self. Se desejas o alheyo, porque nam conservas o teu ? If thou covets what is another's, why dost not thou preserve what is thine ? Note, that after an Interrogation the following Word begins with a great Letter.

The Sign of Admiration is known by the following Sign (!) which likewise requires a greater Character after it.

A Parenthesis is known by two Semilúas, or Half-moons, in which some Words are exempt from the rest of the Speech ; v. g. O peccadór, (se lê nam emandár) sem dúvida será condenádo. ; The Sinner (if he mend not) without doubt will be condemn'd. So likewise when an Author is quoted ; v. g. Bemaventurada será a república (dizia Platão) na qual ou os Reis filósofos, ou os filósofos réynem. Happy will that Republick be (said Plato) in which either Kings are Philosophers, or of which Philosophers are governours.

As for the other inferior Signs, as Divisions, Paragraphs, Astericks, Semicircles, and the like, for Brevity's sake we omit, as being what Custom in Reading and Writing will introduce of Course.

Here

Here follow some Rules which are peculiar in Writing and Reading the Portuguese Language.

First observe, That the Portuguese endeavour to pronounce as they write, and to write as they pronounce; which is a reasonable Argument for the Purity of their Language: As for Example, in the Word Escrévo, the Romans call'd it Scribo. but the Portuguese add to it the Letter e, and change b into v, because they pronounce the same Letters in the Word Escrévo: And therefore it is reputed an Absurdity to add more Letters than what are pronounced, as some do by adding an e to the Word Fee, when it ought only to be a single e with an Accent, fe, and the same for poe instead of pó.

The Second Rule is to give an Account of the Distinction in writing of Words which have the same Letters, but a different Signification, and a different Tone in the Pronunciation, to avoid Confusion, which would otherwise of Necessity appear; v. g. to distinguish the Noun Renúncia from the Verb Renúncia in the third Person Present Indicative, we ought to place an Accent, either Acute or Circumflex, in the Penultima, or last Syllable, save one, for Distinction-sake; v. g. Boa he a renúncia que faz Pédro, o qual renúncia a sua conezia em Páulo, &c.

In the same manner we distinguish the Noun ésta from the Verb está, viz. ésta mulher está cláuda; This woman is lame. And Dáy hum nô no cordél; Make a Knot in the Rope. The same Distinction is made in the Verb Tóstam, the third Person Plural of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, signifying they parch or bake, and the Noun Tostám signifying a piece of Money the value of Five Vintens in this Coin.

So in many Verbs we distinguish the third Person

K

Plural

Plural of the Preterperfect Tense from the same of the Future ; ex. g. Partíram as náos Sábbado, & Partiráram as náos Sábbado ; The Ships departed on Saturday, the Ships will depart on Saturday.

So the Noun Dúvida is distinguished from the Verb Duvida ; v. g. Nam tem dúvida aquillo em que Pedro duvida ; That is not to be question'd that Peter doubts of.

3. Rule, *That such Words as are naturally and originally Latin, ought to be written and express'd in the same Characters ; as Têrra, mássa, syllaba, with this Exception of such Words which in their Pronunciation alter their Sound ; v. g. the Word Chôro in the Latin is written with an h, and signifies a Choire or Consort of Musick, but in Portugueze with an h, signifies Lamentation, and Côro signifies the Consort or Choire.*

In the same manner we ought not to write Parócho, but Paróco ; and Caridáde, not Charidáde ; Monárca and Monarquía, and the like, because the Syllables have a different Sound.

When in the Latin a Letter is doubled, to come as near as possible we do the same, as in the Words Aggravár, aggrávo ; exaggerár, exaggeraçám, which is to be understood where there is no change of Letters ; v. g. the Romans say, Scribo, stélla, mulier, and we both add and change Letters, saying, Escrevo, estrélla, and mulhér.

But Words us'd by the Romans, and fitted to this Language as near as can be, preserve the same Characters ; as they say Defensio, and we say Defénsa and Defénsám ; in others we use ç for í, as in Corrénça, avénça ; and we change the t into ç, as in Gráça, presença, doénça, paciência, clemência, violência.

Words of a Latin Original, but adapted to this Tongue, admit of a different Sound and Pronunciation, and so keep it as in the following Words, Doutór, doúto, rey-tór, colleytór, perséyto, efféyto, afféyto, where the Letter ç is changed into u and y.

As for any Words, where there may be a Doubt whether the Letter *s* or *z* are to be used, having both the same Sound, we generally follow the Latin; as we say *úso*, and not *úzo*; *aplaúso*, and not *aplaúzo*; *cáula*, and not *cáuza*, and the like.

We generally change the Letters *ph* into *f*, as in *Filofia*, *ortografia* and *Felippe*.

We imitate not the Romans in their Diphthongs, for what Words they write with a Diphthong, we write with a single Vowel; v. g. *Edificio*, *estio*, *herdéyro*, *péna*; *féno*, *Ethiopia*, &c. tho' not to be condemned in some proper Names originally Greek; as *Oédipo*, *Oenóne*, *Élio*.

The Letter *K* likewise is not improper sometimes, especially in these two Words borrowed from the Greek; as *Kírios* and *Kalénda*s.

4. Rule concerning the writing of Portuguese Nouns in the Plural Number.

All Nouns end either in a Vowel or a Consonant, first of Vowels; Words ending in *a* in the Singular form their Plural in *as*; v. g. *Pá*, *pás*; *fáma*, *fámas*. If in *e*, the Plural in *es*; as *pé*, *pés*; *polé*, *polés*. If in *i*, the Plural in *ins* or *iys*; as *robí*, *robins* or *robiys*. If in *o* Plural in *os*; as *pô*, *pôs*; *páno*, *pános*. Where note, that several Words ending in *o* that want a long Accent in the first Syllable Singular, have it in the first Plural as *ovo*, *ôvos*; *osso*, *ôssos*; *povo*, *pôvos*; *porco*, *pôr-cos*. Words that end in *u* make their Plural in *us*; as *mú*, *mús*; *perú*, *perús*.

As for Consonants, take notice, that no Portuguese Words end in the following Consonants; viz. *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *h*, *p*, *q*, *t*, *x*; but only in *l*, *m*, *r*, *s*, *z*. To which, prefixing a Vowel, they make their Plurals as follow.

Words ending in *al* make their Plural in *ays*; as *animál*, *animays*; *currál*, *curráys*. El in *eys*; as *Lambél*, *lambéys*. Il in *iys*; as *Gomíl*, *gomíys*. Ol in *oys*; as *Caracól*, *caracóys*. Ul in *uys*; as *Paul*, *paúys*.

Words ending in am regularly make their Plurals in óes; as Trovám, trovóes; padrám, padróes; feijám, feijóes; esquadrám, esquadróes; tostám, tostóes.

Except first severals, that make their Plural in ãos; v. gi Cortezám, cortezãos; cidadám, cidadãos; vil-lám, villaos; cristám, cristãos; irmám, irmãos; mám, mãos; sám, saos; vám, vaos; pagám, pagãos; frangám, frangãos; zangám, zangãos.

Except secondly, Such Nouns as make their Plural in aēs; v. g. Cam, caēs; escrivám, escrivães; capitám, capitães; páam, paēs; massapám, massapaēs; alemám, alemães; gaviám, gaviães; rufiám, rufi-aēs.

Words ending in em make their Plural in ens; v. g. Hómein, hómens; palatrem, palatrens: Im Plur. ins; as Marfim, marfins; fraldelim, fraldelins. Om in ons; as Bom, bons. Um in uns; as Debrúm, debrúns. And so of the rest agreeable to former Rules in the beginning of this Construction.

5. *As to Diphthongs, they are easily understood by the Union of two Vowels, and the first kind is made by y, join'd with the other Vowels, either before or after; ex. g. y before a in Arrayál, and after in Pay; with e in Rey and Ley; with i in Rbïoys and Horiys; with o in Boy and foy; with u, as in Frúyto and Múyto. The next Kind is when the Vowel u is join'd with the rest, as with a in the Words Iguál and Causa; with e in the Words Báque and Déu; with i in Daquí; with o in Lóguo, with u in the Words Móucho and Outórgo. The third sort is when two Vowels, either of the same or different Species, make one Syllable by the Union of a til; as in the Words Irmãos, maçãs; tostóes, escrivães, and the like.*

6. *Rule concerns the doubling of Vowels or Consonants, which as to Vowels is general, that Vowels of the same kind are never doubled if they belong to the same Word, and are complet. I say of the same kind,*
because

because in the Word *Mentiys* *i* and *y* are Vowels of a different kind, and I say belonging to the same Word, because when we say *Véndo* *a* *élle*, and *amáva* *a* *élle*, the two last Vowels are not duplicate, but one Vowel is join'd to another, which is an Article, and I say compleat, because in the Word *Irmaas* the single Vowels are not compleat, but soften themselves into one Syllable.

Then as to Consonants it is certain that the Letters *x* and *z* can never be duplicate, as for the doubling of *r* and *s*, the Ear is the most curious Judge; for single and double they have two distinct Sounds; the one soft and weak, as in *Amára*; and harsher, as in *Amár-ra*. The same may be observ'd of the Letter *s*, as in the Words *Cáso* and *Cásso*, but as to all these the distinguishing Ear, and the Practice of Conversation, will give the best Rules.

However take notice that Consonants must of Necessity be duplicate when they admit of a different Sound, as in the Word *Accénto*, the Ear easily distinguishing between *ac* and *cénto*.

Then observe, that after the Vowel *a* in Verbs compounded of Nouns, by prefixing the said Vowel *a*, a double Consonant is ingrateful to the Ear. Therefore from the Noun *Mánso* we say *Amanfámos*, from *Pédra*, *apedrejár*; from *Nóyte*, *anoytecér*; from *cábo*, *acabár*; from *Provéito*, *aproveitár*; and from *Púro*, *apurár*.

Some Words there are, in which Use rather than the Ear acquaints us with the Duplication of the Consonant after the Vowel *a*, as in the Words *Afforár*, *affinár*, *affogár*.

The last Observation as to this is that in all Words derived from the Latin we imitate them in doubling of Consonants, as in the Words *Affinidáde*, *aggravár*, *communícár*: So *élle*, *délle*, *aquélle*; and *amásse*, *lésse*, *ouvísse*, *fósse*, the Conjunction *se* having no Dependance on the Latin, is always with a single *s*; as *Véjase*, *léyase*, *ouçase*.

7. Rule relates to the writing of Consonants; which although different, yet make the same Sound in Pronunciation; v. g. the three Letters, c, s, z, and g, j. Example c and s, have the same Sound when join'd with e and i, Serám is pronounced with the same Sound, as if it were written with a c, cerám: So Sidáde and Cidáde, sinco and Cínco.

And beyond this we have no other Rule than that being originally Latin, they ought to be written with the same Letters. Therefore we write Cebóla, cidáde, with a c, because the Latin begins with a c; and Senádo and sinéte with an s, for the same reason.

But Words that are originally Portuguese are written with a c, if they end in ece or ice, viz. Amanhéce, anoytéce; ladroíce, parvoíce, and the like, which reading will discover. What the Latines write with ti, the Portuguese write with ci; as Clemência, nogócio, and such as they terminate in sio, we end in am, as Divisám, defensám: Except the Word Passio, which we call Payxám.

The same may be observ'd in comparing the Letters s and z, as, because the Latines write Ménsa, we say Mé-sa, and not Méza; so we say Cása, and not Cáza: However the following Rules will give us some fuller Insight.

First, We end Portuguese Words in a z, which come from the Latin ending with an x; as paz, faz, perdiz, voz, luz.

Secondly, In Patronymical Names; as Fernández, Rodríguez.

Thirdly, In Proper Names of Nations, in ez; as Portuguéz, Ingréz, Irlandéz, Escocéz, Francéz, Olandéz, Gentouéz, &c.

Fourthly, In many Persons of the Verbs Fazér, trazer, dizer; as faz, traz, diz; fazía, trazía, dizia.

5. In Feminine Nouns ending in eza; as Avaréza, fraquéza, rudéza, &c.

6. In all Words ending in az, ez, iz, oz, uz, having

an Accent in the last Syllable ; as Rapáz, enxadréz, charíz, albernóz, alcatrúz.

Seventhly, In the following Numbers ; as Dez, ónze, dóze, tréze, quatorze, quinze, dezaséys, dezaséte, dezóyto, dezanóve, duzentos, trezentos, but from quatrocentos to a Mil or Thousand they are all written with a c.

As for the two other Letters g and j, they give the same Sound, when join'd with the Letters e, i, but a far different Tone, when join'd with a, o, u, of which the Ear it self will be a sufficient Judge, as in ga, go, gu ; ja, jo, ju. As for ge, gi, and je, ji, which have the same Sound, they depend on the Roman Form ; and what is usual in the first, is allow'd in the last, as in the Words Jejúm, engénho, orígem, regér, being in the Latin Jejunium, ingenium, origo, regere, &c. and accordingly we write Génte, fugir, rúgir, imaginár.

Neither Latin nor Portugueze begin any Word with ji, but always with a g ; as ginéte, gínjas, &c.

Nouns ending in gem are always written with a g ; v. g. Págem, bagágem ; levágem, ervágem ; fogágem, ferrágem ; penúgem, babúgem : But in Verbs we meet with Exceptions when the Consonant j is admitted ; as Sobéjem, festéjem, envéjem ; because these and the like Verbs use the same Letter j, when join'd with the Vowel a ; v. g. Sobejár, festejár. As for any other Scruples, as whether it be more proper to write Herége or Heréje, they must be decided by Authors.

8. Rule concerns the Aspiration or Letter H, as it is us'd in this Language.

Among the Antients this Letter was reputed only an Aspiration, but among the Spaniards hath now got the Credit of a Consonant being equivalent to their antient Letter f, for antiently they wrote Fazénda, fijo, fidálgo, fáro ; but now they have alter'd the Mode, writing Haziénda, híjo, hidálgo, háro.

This Letter before a Vowel, and after a Consonant,

hath hardly the force of any Sound, as in *Hómem*, *herdéyro*, *hónrado*, *rhétórica*, and perhaps not improper to write *ómem*, *erdéyro*, *onrado*, *retórica*.

The third Person of the Present Tense Indicative Mood of the Verb *Sou* is always writ with an *h*, as *he*, *is*, to distinguish it from the Conjunction, *e*, and.

The irregular Verb *ir*, to go, is conjugated through all the Moods and Tenses without the Letter *h*, yet in the Imperfect Tenses of the Indicative, Conjunctive and Infinitive Moods, it admits of the said Letter; v. g. *Hia*, *cómo hía*, *que hía*.

They are not to be condemned who write the Word *Havér* with an *h*, because of its Affinity with the Latin Word *Habeo*. However they that write it without an *h* in many Tenses and Persons, ought not to omit it in the second and third Person Singular of the Present, Indicative, Conjunctive and Infinitive, and in the third Person Plural of the said Tense and Mood; v. g. *has*, *ha*, *ham*.

This Aspiration is more perceivable in such Interjections as denote Fear, Mirth or Admiration; as when we write *ah*, *ah*, it denotes Fear; when we say, *áh*, *áh*, it denotes Joy; and when *oh*, *oh*, signifies Admiration.

The Letter *h* is likewise of use in a peculiar manner among us without any Force of Aspiration placed after the Letters *c*, *l*, *n*; as *ch*, *lh*, *nh*, of which we have three distinct Pronunciations not known by the Romans, and seems to be sometimes an Aspiration, and sometimes a Letter, there appearing a very different Sound between *cha*, *lha*, *nha*. We generally explode the *h*, where the Romans use it as before hinted in *Earidáde* and *Córo*.

These Syllables *lha*, *lhe*, *lhi*, *lho*, *lhu*, are so peculiar to us, that the Spaniards, tho' they pronounce it, yet never write it, supplying the want of an *h* by another *l*; v. g. whereas we say *Castelhános*, they write *Castellános*. They also change it into *j*, as when

we write *Trabalho*, they write *Trabájo*; and for *Semelhança*, with us they write *Semejança*.

It is peculiar to us to write *h* after *n*; as *nha*, *nhe*, *nhí*, *nho*, *nhu*; in *mánha*, *pinhéyro*, *grunhít*, *penhór*, *nenhúm*, which the Spaniards excuse by the use of a *til*, or another *n*, in its place; as for *Ninho*, they say *Nino* or *Nínno*.

H before *y* in the beginning of a Word is always written; as in *Hydrópico*, *Hypócrita*, &c.

9. Rule is about the use of Accents, which are three, viz. *Acute*, which raiseth the Voice, and is thus expressed (*â*). *Grave*, which depresseth it thus (*à*); and *Circumflex*, which partakes of both, and is written thus (*â*). The peculiar Use of these Accents in this Language is to distinguish Words that are written with the same Characters, but different only by the Accent; as for Example we write the third Person of the Preterpluperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood with an *Acute* Accent in the Penultima, or last Syllable save one; as when we say, *Amára*, *léra*, *ouvíra*, but we use the same Accent in the Future Tense in the last Syllable, viz. *Amará*, *lerá*, *ouvirá*, &c.

So also is it usual for the Distinction of Nouns, as when we would distinguish *Cor*, a Desire, from *Cor*, a Colour, we make an *Acute* Accent over the first.

In the same manner the third Person of the Preterperfect Tense of the Indicative Mood of the Verb *Fazer*, which is (*fez*) is distinguished from the Noun *féz*, which is *bórra*, or *Drega*.

An *Apostrophe* likewise takes place in this as in other Languages, being designed only for the more pleasant and easie Pronunciation of words, by cutting off an antecedent Vowel; as *de ouro*, *de arroz*, *de ovos*; the Precedent Vowel is supplied by a *Synalepha* or Vocal Note, and writ as follow; *D'ouro*, *d'arroz*, *d'ovos*. And so to prevent Confusion it is always necessary to write with the Vocal Point; as *d'Elvas*, *d'Evo-*

ra, d'armas, and not dêlvas, dêvora, dêrmas, but this is sometimes excusable in Cases wherein by Customary Pronunciation they seem to be one Word; as Nêlta, dêlta, &c.

10. Rule concerns the use of the Note call'd (til), which is useful for the Distinction of Words, which would otherwise breed a Confusion; as when we write Maos, Hands. By this til it is distinguish'd from Máos, Evil or bad.

There hath been an old Debate among the Criticks, which is more proper to write *ão* or *am* either in Nouns; as *Perdigão* ou *perdigam*, or in Verbs; as *Amarão* ou *amarám*; but the latter seems to prevail, because more agreeable to the Original Rules of Orthography, by which we are oblig'd as near as possible to write as we pronounce; but the Determination of this may be excused, as inducing more nicety than use.

11. Rule relates to *ij* and *uv*, to know which are Vowels, and which Consonants, which is soon resolved, by considering that these Letters are distinct of themselves, i the Vowel making a Syllable of its self; as in *ira*, *imãgem*, and *j* the Consonant fastning it self to a following Vowel, as is the Propriety of other Consonants; v. g. in the Words *Jesmim*, *jejuar*, *jarro*; and when it is put in the beginning of a proper Name; as *Joãm*. the Point is needless.

How both the Vowel *i*, and the Consonant *j*, are distinguish'd from the Semi-vowel *y*, easily appears from the latter of it self, being not able to frame a Syllable, but both the other sufficient; as in *pai* and *may*, where *i* is a compleat Vowel, and *y* imperfect, as is also observable in these two Words, *Cayádo* and *Caído*, and both are differenced from *j*, as in the Word *Cajádo*.

As to the two Letters, the Vowel *u* and the Consonant *v* they are distinct both in Nature, Sound and Manner of
wri-

writing, which common Observation confirms, and needs no more Animadversions.

12. Rule touches the Difference between the Portuguese and Greek *y* or Ypsilon. Where note, that as to the first, when the Letter *i* is placed before or after a Vowel, and is no Consonant, nor sufficient to make a Syllable, it is figured in this manner *Y*, and is call'd the Portuguese Ypsilon; v. g. *Rey*, *reys*; *ley*, *leys*; *pay*, *pays*: So in the middle of Words; as *Mortáys*, *andáys*, *seréys*. And indeed this chiefly serves to avoid Confusion, as appears by the three Words *Cayádo*, which signifies a Wall white-limed: *Cajádo*, a Shepherd's Staff; and *Caído*, fallen.

But the Greek *Y* or Ypsilon is a perfect Vowel, and can frame a Syllable, as in the Words *Syllába*, *sylva*, *estyló*, &c.

13. Rule declares the use of the Letter *ç* with its Plica at bottom. Which gives a Sound far different from the common *c*, when joined with the Vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, with which it gains the Force of the Letter *q*, but join'd with the Letters *e* and *i*, a Plica is excus'd as unnecessary.

The first part of the Rule appears by the following Examples; as *Bárca* and *bárça*; *fórca* and *fórça*; *çápa* and *çápa*; *cópa* and *çópa*; *cúbá* and *çúbá*. The latter is seen in these two Words, *Céyra* and *cingir*; in which, as in all others of the like nature, the Plica is excus'd.

But the greater Difficulty will be to know when the *ç* and the *fl* is to be used; and here we must have Recourse to the Roman Custom, as we write *mássa*, and not *máça*; *páссо*, and not *páço*; *cónsul*, and not *cóncul* after their Form.

If the Words are purely Portuguese, *ç* with a Plica is us'd both in beginning, middle and end; v. g. *çápa*, *çotám*; *caçaca*, *caçóte*; and *ameáça*, *cabéça*, *cortíça*, *carróça*, *carapúça*, and *andáço*. So in *fiânça*, *avênça*,

avênça, diltrínça, gerigónça, júnço: So, in fárça, vérça, córça, camúrça; and cadárço, bérço, córço, mastúrço; with raçám and ouçam.

Where note, That if the VWords derived from the Latin begin with an s, we begin with the same; therefore we write not çugidáde, but sugidáde, coming from the VWord sordés; not vérço, but vérso; not defênça, but defênça; not pôçam, but pôssam; and sam, whether Noun or Verb, is always with an s, because the Latin of both sanus and sunt are so.

14. Rule about per and por, the promiscuous use of which hath bred a great Confusion, having both a distinct Nature and Use.

We make use of per when we design to shew the Medium, by which we proceed in any Action; v. g. Eu vos mostraréy per razões evidêntes, este livro foy compôsto per Virgílio.

But our por we use for the Latin pro; v. g. Eu vos ténho por amigo, esta cidade está por el Rey; troçáyme este cavállo por outro. Sometimes por is used for the Latin, propter, (by reason of) v. g. por avér grande tempestáde nam navégo; faréy isto por vos. Only this to be observ'd, that when por is us'd for propter, we join either amor or cáusa; v. g. por amor das néves nam pássô os álpes; por amor ou por cáusa dos Túrcos nam pássô o mar.

So when we join por to the Articles o or a, the r is changed into l, and we say Pôlo amor de déos, and pôla hónra, &c.

After the same manner the Preposition per is join'd to the same Articles, and pêlo and pêla; as pêlo camínho; pêla terra, and the like. All which attended with Observation in Conversation and Reading, are sufficient Rudiments for the Orthography of the Portuguese Language.

FAMILIAR

DIALOGUES

IN

English and Portuguese.

Dialogue I.

Good morrow, Sir; how do you do?

Very well, God be thanked, at your Service.

I thank you, I am your Servant.

How doth the Gentleman your Father do, and Madam your Mother?

How doth your Brother T. do? I heard he was not well.

It is true, he hath been a long time sick of a Fever and an Ague.

And your Sister M. how doth she do? Is she well in Health?

No, Sir, she is almost wild with the Pain of the Head and Teeth.

Is your Uncle G. yet arrived in Safety?

I. Prática.

Bons días Senhor, como está VM?

Bom Déo graças pára Servir á VM?

A VM mil ánnos, Sou seu Sérvô e criado.

Cómo está o Senhor seu pay; e a Senhora sua May?

Cómo está o seu Irmão T. ouvi dizer que estava mal disposto.

He verdáde, ha muito que estêvi doente de huã Fébre e maléctas.

E a sua Irmã M. cómo está ella? está de saude?

Não Senhor, está ella, quási dóuda com dores da cabeça e dos dentes.

Chegou ja o seu tio G. em salvamêto? *Yes,*

Yes, Sir, he came late last Night, very weary.

Where is he? Is he yet in Bed? I will awake him.

No, Sir, he will be angry; he sleeps yet soundly.

It is no matter, shew me his Lodging, and knock at the Door.

Please to come up, Sir, I will knock; but I well know he will be in a Passion with me.

Who is there? Who knocks at the Door?

A Friend, open the Door.

O Sir, is it you? I am glad to see you well.

You are here very early; is there any Body else with you?

Come in, and tell me what it is a Clock.

The Clock just now struck Eight.

Is it so late? I was out in my reckoning.

You are very lazy, make haste and rise quickly.

Let me alone, I must sleep yet longer, I have not slept at all this Night.

My Head akes so that I cannot bear it.

Si Senhór, véyo óutem bem tárde, e muito cansado.

Onde está? ainda está na cama? acordárlhe ey.

Não Senhór, agastárlhe ha, ainda dórmee segúro e sem cuydados.

Não impórta, móstrame a sua pousáda, e bâte á porta.

Súba VM Senhór, baterey, mas bem sey que se apainoxará comigo.

Quem está ahí, quem bâte á porta?

Rapáz eu, ábre a porta. Senhór! VM he? fólgo de ver VM com saúde.

VM está acá bem fédo, está alguém de mais?

Entre VM, e digame, que horas sam.

O relógio ainda agóra déu óuto horas.

Tão tárde he? fiquey enganádo na minha conta.

VM he muy preguiçoso, avía, e levántese depressa.

Deíxame, ey de dormin ainda mais, não dormi náda ésta nóite.

Dórmee a cabeça tanto que não póssó comigo.

Come,

Come, come, get up, are you not ashamed to keep your Bed with Excuses?

Have but a little patience, and stay a little, I will arise presently.

Be not angry, I speak for your Good.

Give me my Stockings and Shooes.

Where are they? I cannot find them.

I believe they are under the Bed, go look for them.

So I may seek them where they are not.

I see them not, they are not there.

Put on your Shooes, Coat and Breeches.

Take out of your Chest a Cravat and Ruffles, and forget not to comb your Head.

Where is the Comb? I can find none, neither of Horn or Box.

Give some clean Water to wash with, and a Towel.

I am now dress'd, and if you please let us go abroad.

No, Sir, but first with your Leave we must eat our Breakfast.

Ora sus, ergue-se, não tem vergonha ficar deitado na cama com desculpas.

Tenha paciência, e espere hum pequeno, logo hei de alevantarme.

Não se agaste, fallo tu por seu proveito

Dá cá as meas e os sapatos.

A onde estão? não os posso achar.

Creyo que estão em baixo da cama, váy buscállos.

Assim poderéy buscar ágoa em fonte seca.

Eu não os vejo, alí não estão.

Cálce os çapatos, e veste a casaca com os calções.

Tíre de sua caixa á crevata com púnhas, e não esqueça de pentear a cabeça.

Que do péntem? não acho nenhúm nem de ponta nem de búxo.

Dá cá ágoa limpa ás mãos, com hua toalha.

Ja estou vestido de todo, e se VM quizer vámonos para fóra.

Não Senhór, mas primeiro com licença de VM avémós de almoçar.

What

What you please, I am contented.

There is no great Matter for you; Some Bread and Butter, with a few Pears and Figs, &c.

It is more than enough, I am used to Delicacies in a Morning.

Well, I doubt all will be too little; let us go down into the Kitchen.

Have you a Knife?

Yes, Sir.

Please to cut your self Bread and Butter, or Cheese; and when you please to drink here is red and white Wine, with cool Water, &c.

Will you please to taste the Ale or Beer.

No, Sir, I thank you, I had rather have some red or white Wine with Water.

What will you drink out of? the Pot or Glass?

I think it more pleasant to drink out of the Pot.

Drink it up; I take it to be very good Wine.

I can drink no more, Sir; I have drunk extravagantly.

O que VM quizer, eu estou contenta.

Não há muito que lhe dar Senhor, pão e manteiga com hum par de peras de cheiro e hum poucos de figos, &c.

Basta que sobeja, não sou acostumado á a golidices pélla menhaa.

Andar recéyo que tudo será limitádo, vámos para baixo na cozinha.

Tem VM faca?

Tenho Senhor.

Parte para VM pão com manteiga ou queyo e querendo beber, eis aquí vinho tento e branco com água serenada, &c.

VM será servido de pravalla álla ou cervelia.

Não Senhor á VM muitos ánnos, ántes quero vinho tinto ou branco com água.

De que quer VM beber? do púcaro ou cópo de vidro?

A mim me parece mais gostoso beber do pícaro.

Beba tudo, tenho para mi que o vinho he regalado.

Não posso mais Senhor, tenho bebido como hum fornheiro.

I am full up to the Chin,
let us go walk in the Gar-
den.

Let us go, but see first if
the Key be in the Door.

It is, but I cannot open
the Door, the Key is rusty.

Let me see, you are very
unhandy.

How do you like the Gar-
den? Is it not pleasant?

Yes, Sir, these Shades
and Arbours are extremely
delightful.

Let us walk in that Walk,
where there is not so much
Heat.

This walk is beautified
with a great Variety of fine
flowers.

It seems to me like a Pa-
radise on Earth.

Look there how the Roses,
with the Tulips, and the
Ranunculus, with the Car-
nations, charm the Eye with
the Briskness of their radi-
ant Colours.

Gather any of them that
you please to make a Nosegay.

No, Sir, it is enough that
I have the Pleasure of see-
ing them in their Spring.

Estou farto de tudo, vá-
monos passear no jardim.

Vámos, mas veja pri-
meiro se a chave está na
pórtas.

Está, mas não posso a-
brilla pórtas, a chave está
ferrugenta.

Deixa me ver, VM tem
roim géito.

Cómo lhe parece o jar-
dim? não he lindo e pra-
zenteiro?

Senhor si, estes arvoré-
dos e ramados tem bellis-
sima vista.

Passeemos naquella rua
aonde não fizez tanta cal-
ma.

Esta rua está rodeada
com mil variedades de
flores fermosas.

Amim me parece como
hum paraíso terreal.

Olha lá, cómo as rólas
com as tulipas, e os ranún-
culós com os cravos, encân-
tao os ólhos com a vivêza
de suas côres brilhantes.

Cólhe VM qualesquer
dellas, se quizer, para fazer
hum ramalhete.

Não Senhor, he bástas
que tenho o gosto de vél-
las na sua primavera.

L

Sir,

Sir, I heartily thank you for the Favour of this Divertisement.

I believe it is near Dinner time, let us go home.

I must take my Leave of you, I have something to do at home that is inexcusable.

But will you then leave me alone? This is not to be endured.

Sir, I beg your Dispensation at present, my Business is nicely obliging.

Well, but be not refractory, Civility will oblige you to dine with me.

Here Boy, go see if Dinner be ready.

I go, Sir, but I believe it is yet early.

Lay the Cloth, and bring the Saltfeller, with clean Plates and Napkins.

Give here Knives, Forks and Spoons, and let the Sloop come upon the Table.

This is our greatest Dainty, I think they are good and well seasoned.

Be pleased to help your self to some Beef, I believe it is well roasted.

It may be you had rather have boild Mutton with Spinage; be not coy among Friends.

Senhór, agradeço-lhe a VM de coração p'ello favor d'este p'asso-t'empo.

Créyo que serám horas de jentár, vámos pára cása.

Ey de despedirme de VM, ténho que fazer em cása que não se pôde escusar.

Pois VM me deixará sozinho? Isso não se ha de sofrér.

Senhór, eu peço-lhe a sua licença por ora; o negócio he muy preciso.

Ora, não seja VM refert'eiro, em cortezia ha de jentár comigo.

O rapaz, váy ver se o jentár está feito.

Eu vou Senhór, mas créyo que ainda he fédo.

Ponha a mésa, e tráiga o sal'eiro com pratos e guardanapos limpos.

Dá cá facas, garfos e colheres, e vénham as sopas.

Isso he o nóss'o mayór regalo, paréce-me sam boas e bem temperadas.

Séja VM servido partír para sy da vása, créyo que está bem assada.

Talvéz que ántes queria de carne de carneiro cozida com espináfres, não se estranhe com amigos.

John,

Johnly take away this Plate, and bring something else to the table.

It is coming, Sir, the Cook is taking it up, and will send it presently.

Do you like the Turtles, now is their Season, and they are very fat.

I know it very well, Sir, but I had rather have a Leg of the Turkey, or a Wing of the Goose or Capon.

Who's there? Give me some Wine and Water.

What Wine will you be pleased to have? White or red?

Fill me some white Wine of the Hoghead newly broached.

Bring the Fruit to the Table, and if there be any thing else to make up a small Dinner.

Taste these sweet-scented Pears, the Muscadine Grapes are the first of the Season, and those Genebras Apples are now only palatable.

Please to have any thing else? Command as if you were at home.

Nothing more, I humbly thank you, Sir, I have eaten of every thing profusely.

O João, tiray este prato, e venha mais que comer á mesa.

Ja vay Senhór, o Cozinheiro está tirándoo, e logo o mandará.

Gotta VM d'quelles rôlas? agora he feu tempo dellas, e sam bern gôrdas.

Bern o fey Senhór, mas ántes quero a pérna do perú, ou a áza do capão ou páto.

Oh lá, dá me cá vinho com ágoa.

Que vinho quer VM, branco ou tinto?

Encheme de vinho brancos do quarto novamente abérto.

Vénha fruíta pára a mesa, e se ouvér algua cousa mais de sôbre-mesa, pára acabar hum jentár humitádo.

Próva VM aquéllas péras de chéiro, as úvas muscateis sam as primeiras do áнно, e as maçãas Genebras agora só tem seu gôsto natural.

Se VM quizer algua cousa mais, mánde como se estivér na sua própria casa.

Náda mais, viva, VM mil ánnos, ja coméi de tudo como hum alárve.

If you please to sleep after Dinner, here you have a fresh retiring Room with Conveniencies.

A Dialogue with a Book-seller.

SIR, have you any Portuguese Books?

Yes, Sir, what Books will you please to have?

Show me some that treat of History, Chronology, Geography and Navigation.

Here is a piece of Mathematicks very ancient, and a Treatise of Navigation as old as Vasco de Gama, that famous Discoverer of the Indies.

How much do you ask for this Book?

I cannot sell them for less than six Milreas, they are two Volumes in Folio, and well bound.

They are extravagantly dear, will you take a Moeda of Gold for them, or Thirty Shillings English?

Truly I cannot, Sir, they were valued for more in Sheets.

Sir, it is impossible, the other Day I bought of a Neighbour of yours for Four

Querendo VM dormir fêto despois de jantar, eis aquí húa recâmara de fresquidão, com seu estrádo e almofadas.

A Prática com o Livréiro.

Senhór, tem VM algúns Livros Portuguezes?

Ténho Senhór, que Livros quer VM?

Môstra me algúns Históricos, Chronologicos, Geográficos e de Navegaçám.

Aquí tem VM hum livro Matemático muito antigo, e hum tratado de Navegação do tempo de Váscó de Gáma, aquélle celebrádo descobridór da Índia.

Quanto péde VM por este livro?

Não pôsso vendéllos por ménos de seis Milréas; fãdous tómos em Fol. e muito bem encadernádos.

São muito cáros, quer VM húa moeda de ouro, ou trinta Shelins estarlingas por elles?

Por certo não pôsso Senhór, por mais se taixáram em papél.

Não he possível Senhór, compréy est'outro día de hum de seus vezinhos, dous Milreas

Milreas two much bigger Books than these.

It may be so, but not of this make, the binding of these only in Calve's Leathers cost three Crowns, besides the gilding.

To be at a word, Sir, I will give you Four Milreas Five Hundred Reas, but not a Farthing more.

Very well, I will not refuse your Money, being a Customer, altho' the Loss will be mine.

Have you seen this modern Piece of Architecture, with the Art of Gunnery and Fortification.

Not as I know of, Sir, who is the Author of them?

I cannot tell you, Sir, they are lately come from Italy, and were printed at Florence by the Order of the Grand Duke of Tuscany.

How many Volumes are they, four or five?

They are four Tomes in Quarto, with a large Index annexed.

Very well, another time, when I have more leisure, we will talk more of this Affair.

Farewel, Sir, I am your humble Servant.

livros muito mayores por quatro Milreás.

Poderá ser, mas não deste feitio, custaram estes só da encadernaçám de bezerro, tres cruzados fóra de douradúra.

Em fim Senhór, daréy a VM quatro mil e quinhenta Reas, e nenhum ceýtíl mais.

Andár, não engeitaréy seu dinhéiro, por ser fraguéz, ainda que a pérda seja de minha parte.

Vio já VM ésta péça nova de architettura, com a arte de artelharía e fortificação.

Ainda (que eu saiba) não, quem he o antór dellas?

Não sey dizér a VM, viéram (ha pouco) de Itália, e se imprimíram em Florénça pélllo mandádo do GrãoDúque de Toscana.

Quántos tómos sam? quatro ou sinco?

Sam quatro tómos em quarto, com huá taboáda copiósa júnta.

Bem está Senhór, em outra ocasiám, cómo tiver mais lugár, fallarémos mais devagár nésta matéria.

A Déos Senhór, á ordem de VM.

A complimentary Dialogue
upon a casual Meeting
of two Friends.

SIR, God save you, how
do you as to your Health?
I heard you have been sick,
and out of order.

Sir, I humbly thank you,
I am something better, at
your Service, I have been a
long time at Death's Door
with a malignant Fever.

How long have you gone
abroad to recruit your self?

It is about a Month since
I went out of Town to my
Brother's Country House?

Why did you not send for
me when you were sick? I
would have come presently
to have given you any Assi-
stance,

I had then other Thoughts,
being continually harrassed
with Anxieties and incessant
Pains.

Besides I should have had
enough to do to have sent for
all my Friends and Ac-
quaintance.

You say well, Sir, but my
Ambition leads me to be ac-
counted one of the first.

A prática ceremonial á
hum encontro fortuito
de dous Amigos.

SENHÓR, guarde Deos a
pessoa, como está VM
de saúde? Ouvi dizer que
estêve doente e maldispó-
sto.

Béijo as mãos de VM
meu Senhor, estôu alguã
côusa melhorado pára ser-
vir a VM; ja ha muito que
estive quasi amortecido de
hua Febre malina.

Quanto ha que VM sa-
hió fóra pára convalecér.

Averá côusa de hum
mez que fuy da cidade á
quinta do meu Irmão.

Paraqué não me man-
dôu VM chamar em
quanto estáva doente? eu
lôgo ouvêra de vir pára
acodirhe com todos os
alívios possíveis.

Tinha então outros sen-
timentos, ficando sempre
molestado com ansias e dó-
res defasfogadas.

Além disso, bem mal a-
viado estívêra de mandar
chamar todos os meus a-
migos e conhecidos.

VM diz bem Senhor,
mas he minha ambição
de ser reputado por hum
dos primêiros.

You ought therefore to have come without sending for.

I have come above twenty times, but could never find you at home.

I am very sorry for it, and I heartily thank you for the Trouble you had.

You have rewarded me sufficiently by your good Inclinations, which always surpass the Deed.

When will you be at home, for I intend to come and dine with you.

You do not dine at home every Day.

I seldom dine abroad.

I came two or three times at Dinner-time, and it was always told me that you dined abroad.

It may be so, when my Brother was in the City.

Hath your Brother been in Town lately?

Yes, Sir, he came the Day before yesterday, and returned last night.

I am sorry for it that I did not go to see him.

How came it to pass that he would not do me the Honour to see me?

Pois por isso devia VM de ter vindo sem ser chamado.

Tenho vindo mais de vinte vezes de visita, mas nunca pôde achárlhe a VM em casa.

Pésame muito disso, e agradeço-lhe de coração pólo enfado que teve.

VM me tem apremiado bastantemênte na sua boa vontade que sempre supre a obra.

Quándo estará em casa? porquê tenho tenção de jentár com VM.

VM não jenta em casa todos os dias.

Poucas vezes jento fóra.

Vinha eu duas ou tres vezes ás horas de jentár, e sempre me foy dito que VM jentáva fóra.

Talvêz seria, quándo meu Irmão estava na cidade.

Estêve o seu Irmão na cidade estes dias passados?

Si Senhór, veyo anteontem, e tornou outra vez ontem á tarde.

Amim me pésa que não fuy visitálo.

Cómo fodedeo, que me nam fizesse a honra de me vir ver á mim.

*He made so little a stay,
that he went to see no Body.*

*He came hither about a
Business of that Consequence,
that left him not one Hour
unemployed.*

*You do well to excuse
him, for it concerns you so
to do at this time.*

*If I knew I did ill, I
would not do it.*

*But how do you do now as
to your Health?*

*Very well, I thank you;
I had a narrow Escape,
thinking of nothing less than
dying.*

*From my Childhood I ne-
ver had been sensible of such
smarting and violent Pains.*

*As to the Physicians I re-
mained altogether forlorn,
there being at last no Hopes
of me.*

*Very well, since the Dan-
ger now is past, let us talk
of something else.*

*However, sometimes the
Remembrance of past Evils
affords a Delight.*

*Let us go forward to the
Town where our Friend T.
M. lives.*

*Look there is his Servant
Peter, ask him if he be at
home.*

*Têve tão pouca detença
que não foi ver ninguém.*

*Véyo acá sobre hum ne-
gócio de tanta importância,
que não lhe deixava nen-
huã hora desocupada.*

*VM faz bem desculpál-
lo, pois lhe convém nesta
ocasião.*

*Se eu soubêra que fizêra
mal, não avia de fazêllo.*

*Mas, cómo está VM por
óra de sua saúde.*

*Muito bem, á VM milân-
nos; escapéy de bem, cuy-
dando de cousa nenhuma
senão de pagar o tributo á
môrte.*

*Dêde menino, nunca
tinha sentido huas dôres
tam trabalhôsas, picântes
e rigorôsas.*

*Quanto aos Médicos, fi-
quéy de tódo desempará-
do, estando finalmente
em desesperaçã.*

*Andár, ja que o perigo
está vencido, fallêmos em
óutras cousas.*

*Com tudo, as vézes, o
que he duro de pastar he
dóce de lembrár.*

*Vámos por diênte á vil-
la ónde môra o nôsso amí-
go T. M.*

*Eilohí o seu criado Pé-
dro, preguntalhe se está em
cása.*

Hark

Hark you, Peter, is your Master here?

No, Sir, he hath been gone into the Country these three Days.

Why did not you go with him? What can he do alone?

Because it was not convenient, when he will, he doth all things to please himself.

Whether is he gone? to Cintra, or on the other side of the Water?

No, Sir, he is now at Celares, a Shopkeeper's Seat of the New Street.

When will he return? Do you know if he comes this Week?

I cannot tell you, for he said not a Word to me.

I thought he would not go, by reason of the Rain and bad Weather.

He matters not that, he is no fresh-Water Soldier.

Did he go on Horseback, or in a Litter?

He went on Horseback, Sir, because he likes not the way of a Litter.

Pray tell me, is his Cousin Mr. T. T. at home?

No, Sir, he went out about half an Hour since, but I be-

O Pédro, está acá o seu Senhór?

Não Senhór, ja ha tres dias que foy fóra da térra.

Paraqué não fostes vos com elle? que fará elle sozinho?

Pois não convinha, quando elle quer, faz todas as cousas á sua vontade.

Pára onde foy? á Cintra ou á bándá d'além?

Não, Senhór, está agora em Coláres na quinta de hum Mercadór da rua nova.

Quando ha de tornár, sabes tu se virá ésta sômana?

Não sey dizér a VM, porqué não me disse náda.

Cudéy que não ouvêsse de hir á conta da chuva e do témpo roím.

A elle não se lhe dá náda d'isso, pois ja não he soldádo bisónho.

Foy á cavállo ou na Littera?

Foy á cavállo, Senhór, porqué aborrece o andár da Littera.

Pois digáme, o seu cunhado, Senhór T. T. está em cása?

Não está, Senhór, averá méya hóra que foy pára lieve

He will be here presently, if you please to stay.

Please to rest your self a little, he will not tarry.

What are you reading there? Is there any News to day?

The Harlem Gazette speaks of nothing but War, and they wrote from Paris that they hourly expect News of some rencounters between the French and the Imperialists.

What do they say of the Princes of the North? How go the Affairs between the King of Poland and the Czar of Moscovy with Swedeland?

The Reports are various in all places, some talk of an Accommodation, and others of prolonging the War, but as yet nothing certain.

The latest Letters from Holland say, that they hourly suspect some surprisal from the French in Flanders.

Be it as it will the supreme Government is still the same, and there is a great deal of truth in that old saying, That very often a

fôra, mas creyo que logo virá, se VM quizer esperar.

Quer VM descansar hum pequêno? Não ha de tardar náda.

Que está VM lendo? há algúas nóvas óje?

A Gazêta de Hárlem não fália senão de guerras, e se escreve de París, que todas as horas estão esperando póllas nóvas de algúm encôntro entre os Francêzes e as forças do Império.

Que dizem dos Príncipes do Nórte? Cómo vay o negócio entre el Rey de Polónha e o Czar de Moscovia com Suécia?

Ha vários rumôres em toda a parte, hûns fállam de acórdos e concértos, e óutros da continuação da guerra, mas atégóra tudo vay incerto e duvidoso.

As últimas cartas de O-lánda dizem, que todas as horas estão receando algúm sobressalto dos Francêzes de Frândes.

Sêja o que for, ainda Déos está onde estava, e ha muita verdade naquêlle dito antigo, que muitas vezes socêde, que a boa guér-

good

good War makes an advantageous Peace.

ra faz a boa paz.

A Dialogue between a Master and his Servant.

O Collóquio entre o Amo e seu Criado.

JOHN, *where art thou ? Come hither.*

O João, *ónde estás ? vende cá.*

Here I am, what is your pleasure, Sir ?

Aquí estou Senhór, que manda VM ?

Give me my Cloaths and Slippers, I will get up.

Dámi cá os vestidos com as chinélas, quero erguer-me.

Where are your Slippers, Sir ? Where did you put them last Night ?

Onde estão as chinélas Senhór ? ónde as poz VM ontem á nóite ?

There they are under that Chair, bring them presently.

Alí estão em baixo da quélla cadeira, trazéias logo.

Go look for my Socks, and a pair of thread Stockings.

Vay buscár as escaarpíns, com hum par das méas de linho.

The Landress hath not yet brought the Linnen.

A Lavandéira ainda não trouxe a roupa.

Which Suit will you be pleas'd to wear to day, the new one, or that you wore Yesterday ?

Que vestido quer VM trazer óje, o nóvo, ou aquillo de ontem ?

What weather is it to day ? Is it still as it was, sullen and cloudy ?

Que témpo faz óje ? Está o ceo ainda como dantes triste e toldado ?

It is like to rain, and it blows very hard as if it were a storm at Sea.

Ha móstras de ágoa, e aventa muito, como se avia algúm temporal no mar.

I believe fair Weather will never come again, it is above fifteen days since I saw

Créyo que nunca ha de tornár mais o témpo sereno, ha ja mais de quinze

our

our old Friend the Sun.

Will you please to have your clean Shirt now it is dry and warm?

It is true, I forgot it, this is very dirty.

I do not wonder at it, for it is above eight days since you put it on clean.

Whose fault is it? I am sure it is not mine.

The Landress deserves to be punished for not coming as she ought.

Go to her to day, and bid her come and speak with me to Morrow Morning early.

I'll go, Sir, without fail, here is your Shirt.

Comb out my Peruque, whilst I am dressing my self.

Where is the Comb? I know not what is become of it.

Go look for it, I put in my Coat pocket.

It is not there, I cannot find it any where.

Probably I have lost it, take Money and buy another.

What will one cost? I be-

dias que não tenho visto o nosso amigo velho, o sol.

Quer VM a camisa limpa, ja que está enxuta e quente?

He verdade, não me a- lembréy, ésta está muito suja.

Não me espanto disso Senhór, pois ha ja mais de óuto dias que VM poz a limpa.

Quem tem a culpa, por certo não a tenho eu.

A lavandeyra meréce castigo por não ter vindo como devia.

Vay ter com ella óje, e dígalhe, que vénha fallar comigo cedo pella men- haa.

Irey Senhór sem fálta, eis aquí tem VM a sua ca- misa.

Penteáy o cabelléyro em quanto eu estoyme vestin- do.

Que do pentém, não sey que he feito d'elle.

Vay buscállo, eu o metia na algibeira de casaca.

Não está ahí, não o pos- so achar nenhúres.

Tal vez o tenho perdi- do, tomáy dinhéiro para comprar outro.

Quanto ha de custar, lieve

lieve there are none here good
for any thing but what
come from abroad.

Here take a Crown and
give me the rest again.

Give me my Sword and
Gloves, I go out to Break-
fast at my Uncles.

Yes, Sir, I remain at
Home till Dinner time, ex-
pecting your Commands.

Remember to go to Mr.
T. H. and tell him I won'd
speak with him.

Have you any Business
with him? He promised to
come hither to Morrow in
the Evening.

I would have him assist
me in this occasion, I want
his Advice.

Look here he comes, Sir,
time and opportunity are the
best directors.

You are welcome Mr. T.
H. I was just now talking
of you.

Master F. G. I am your
Humble Servant, have you
any Commands to lay upon
me? I am always ready to
obey them.

Sir, I thank you, I have
a nice Business to impart
to you, in which I desire

créyo que não os ha acá
de préltimo, senão aquél-
les que vem de fóra.

Eis aquí, tomáy hum
crúzado, e tornáy me á dar
a demasia.

Dacá a espáda com as
luvas, eu vou fóra al-
morçar na cása de meu
tio.

Si Senhór, fico eu em
cása até as horas de jentár,
esperando as ordens de
VM.

Alumbrate de jr ter
com Senhór T. H. e di-
galhe que quero fallárlhe.

Tem VM algum negó-
cio com elle? elle prome-
téo vir pára acá a menhaa
á tarde.

Eu quero que me acuda
nésta ocasiám, hey de mi-
stér o seu consélho.

Ey lo hí vem, Senhór, o
témpeo e a ocasiám móstra
o que se déve fazer.

Vénha embôra Senhór
T. H. ainda agora estíve
fallando em VM.

Criado Senhór F. G.
meu Amo, quer VM que
eu faça alguma couza, sempre
me tem pronto ás súas ór-
dens.

Viva VM mil ánnos Sen-
hór, tenho hum negócio
preciso que lhe comunicár
your

your Counsel.

Very well, tell me what it is, and I will soon give you my Opinion?

It is this, I want Money, and I am going to find out one that oweth me some, and I am thinking what I shall do if he doth not pay me.

Where lives he? Is his House far from hence?

No, Sir, it is about half a League, more or less.

Do you think he is at Home at this time?

I believe so, for a Neighbour of his told me that the Evening is the best time to find him at Home.

Stay a little and drink a glass of Wine before you go.

Sir, I thank you, it is now too late, and I am unwilling to lose the opportunity.

Very well, you will not stay long? And I will wait for you in St. Domíngo's Church-yard.

I'll be with you presently.

em que lhe peço o seu consêlho.

Ora, dígame por vida sua, e logo lhe direi o meu parecer.

Pois, isso he, necessito de dinheiro, e eu vou buscár hum certo sogeito que me deve algúm, e estou em dúvidas comigo que poderéy fazer se me não pagar.

Onde mora elle? Tem sua casa longe daqui?

Não Senhór, ha cousa de méya légoa, pouco mais ou ménos.

Parécelhe que estará em casa á éstas horas.

Créyo que si, pois hum vezinho seu me disse, que as horas da tarde serám as mais acertadas de achá-lo em casa.

Espére hum pequeno, e priméiro que vay proverá as nóssas ágoas.

A VM mil ánnos Senhór, ja he tarde, e não quero perdêlla ocasiám.

Está bem Senhór, VM não tardará muito? Entretanto espero eu no ádrio de S. Domíngos.

Eu venho logo.

A Dialogue between two Friends about a Journey or Voyage, with other Occurrences.

O Sir, are you here yet? I expected a Letter from you from London the last weeks Post.

It is true, Sir, I cou'd not help it, I thought to have gone the last Week, but I had an embroiled Business that stopt me.

Well, what hinders you now? Is the Ship ready? And are your Goods dispatch'd in the Custom-house?

Not yet, Sir, there are some difficulties about the Duties of exported Goods, which will be cleared to Morrow.

Is the Ship clear'd in the Custom-house? And have you all your Provisions aboard?

Yes, Sir, I think I shall have occasion for nothing more.

Do you not think I am sufficiently provided for? I have put aboard for my self and Servant two Sheep, four Dozen of Hens, four

A prática éntre dous amigos de huã jornada ou viagem com mais outras cóusas differétes.

Senhór! Está VM ainda aqui? Estíve esperádo por huã cártá de VM de Lóndres, péllo corréo da somána passáda.

He verdáde Senhór, não óuve remédio, tratéy de partír á somána passáda, mas tíve hum negócio embaraçado que me poz em deténça.

Pois, agóra que ha de impediménto? o navío está léstes? e as fazéndas sam despachádas na alfândega?

Ainda não Senhór, ha huns escrúpulos das fazéndas no Consuládo pára fóra, que liquidárse hão á menháa.

O navío está despachádo na Alfândega? E tem VM tóda súa matolatágem abórdó?

Senhór si, Créyo que não hey de míster nada mais.

Não lhe parece, que estou provido bastantaménte? Pois mandéy abórdó por mim e meu criádo 2 carneiros, 4 dúzias de galínhas, Turkeys,

Turkeys, four Geese, and two Barrels of Wine.

Your Provisions are enough for a two Months Voyage.

Have you agreed with the Captain for your Passage, how much you must give him for your self and Man?

I made a bargain with the Captain to have the Cabin for me and my Man for twenty Milreas, or about six Pounds five Shillings Sterling.

I think it very reasonable; God send you a good Voyage.

But pray tell me, is it any Business of consequence that introduceth you to this sudden expedition?

It is, Sir, I have some Accounts to adjust with my correspondents of very great Moment.

Have you any other Business there? Have you any Money lying there among your Acquaintance?

My Affairs are such in London, and in other parts of England, as can be managed by none but my self.

I have also some Money there which I must endeavour to recover or secure.

4 perús, 4 pátos com dous barrís de vinho.

Os mantimentos bastam por hũa viagem de dous mēses.

Tem contratado com o Capitão por sua passagem? quanto lhe ha de dar por VM mais o seu criado.

Fiz concérto com o Capitão pólo camaróte, por mim e mais meu criado, em vinte milreãs, ou seis libras e cinco Shelins Estarl.

Bem acomodado está no meu parecer, Déos lhe dê a boa viagem.

Mas, digame Senhór, ha algum negócio de importância que obriga a VM a esta apressada partida.

Ha Senhór, tenho huas contas que ajustar com meus correspondentes de muito pézo e valor.

Tem VM outros negócios? ou tem algum dinhéiro que se lhe fica devendo de téus conhecidos.

Os meus interésses e negócios são taes, e tão variados, que ninguém os pôde tratar, senão eu mesmo pessoalmente.

Tenho também lá algum dinhéiro, que hey de segurar ou arrecadar.

I am of an Opinion that you will carry more with you than you will bring Home.

Have you any Lands or Houses there? If you have, sell them forthwith.

I have some fine Houses there, but not an Inch of Land, besides the Gardens, and Orchards, and Courts about the Building, which I cannot sell, unless I am present.

Why not? Send a Letter of Attorney to a Friend or Acquaintance to do it for you.

I have neither Friend nor Acquaintance that I can confide in; I have only one Brother, but it doth not convene me to give him that power.

Why, if you will not trust your Brother, whom will you trust?

I will remember my Grandfather's advice as much to avoid Accounts with Relations, as Debts with such as are absented.

You say well, Sir, and since you are resolved, I'll go Home and write my Letters.

Tenho para mim, que levará consigo mais do que tornará á trazer para casa.

Tem VM lá algumas terras de herança, ou casas? Se as tiver, que as venda logo.

Tenho lá huas casas apartadas, mas nem geira, nem méya geira de terra, fóra dos jardins, órtos, pomares e páteos aoredór da casaria, os quaes não posso vender sem eu estar presente.

Paráque não? mände húa carta de procuração á hum amigo ou conhecido, que o faça.

Não tenho lá nem amigo nem conhecido, que possa sem escrupulos fiarme delles, só tenho hum irmão, á quem não me convém alargar este poder.

Pois, se não tiver confiança no seu irmão, de quem se fiará?

Bem me alémbro do consêlho do meu avô, de tanto arrenegar de contas com parentes, como de dividas com ausêntes.

VM diz bém Senhór, e huã vez que está resolvído, iréy para a casa escrever as minhas cartas.

In the mean while, farewell, I'll wait on you to Morrow Morning, and take my leave of you.

No, Sir, that must not be, you must without fail Dine with us, and we will wait for you till one of the Clock.

Sir, your Servant, you have over-mastered me with civilities, and shall be obeyed.

A Dialogue between some Friends about going abroad for a Day or two for Recreation.

Gentlemen, you are welcome; now that we have two or three Days respite from business, where shall we go to divert our selves.

Where you please, we are all here ready, whether it be on the other or this side of the water, let us agree, and nothing shall hinder us.

Is there no Feast nor Country Wake on the other side this Summer time to spend a little time in merriment.

I believe there is; it cannot belong to the Cábo Feast, where there will be Bull-running, and an abundance of Company.

Ora, entretanto a Déos, Senhór, amenhã pélla menhã viréy beijár as mãos e despedirme de VM.

Não, Senhór, isso não ha de ser, VM sem fálta jentará connóscó, e esperaremos até a hũa hóra.

Criado méu Senhór, VM me tem vencido com cortezias e será servido.

A prática éntre huns amigos de passár o témpo hum par de días fóra da cidade.

Senhóres, têmhã VM, bóa vinda; ja que temos dcus ou três días de fólga, adónde iremos passár o témpo.

Onde VM quizerem, ou seja, da bândia dalém ou daquém, acordemos, é não averá impedimento nenhum.

Não ha fésta nenhuma nem romaria á bũada dalém neste témpo de verã onde pudermos gozár de alguma alegria e galeófas?

Créyo; que não pôde tardár muito a Romaria de Nôssa Senhora, do Cábo, a-ónde se verá a fésta de tóuros com hum concúrso de gente pompóso.

Let

Let us go thither, it is a pleasant place, and I think it begins about a Week hence.

But if the weather should prove bad and sullen, what must be done then?

Well, we must have Patience where no Remedy is to be found.

To morrow is Holiday, let us ride out into the Country.

With all our Hearts; have we any Acquaintance abroad to treat us?

I know a Country Farmer that hath an extraordinary Cellar of Wine, we will go see it.

But if he be not at home, where shall we go to find any Refreshment.

There is a Farm belonging to a Convent of Friars not far off; I know the Friar that is the Steward; and if he be there, we shall not want to eat and drink.

Well, let us go, are the Horses saddled, and the other Beasts ready?

Every thing is ready, only one of the Mules wants a Shooe.

Send the Boy to the Farrier to have the Mule shooed, and let it be done presently.

Vámos lá; he huã bélla práça, e parécemi começará daqui á huã somána.

Mas se tẽmpo estivér roím e brúsko, então que ha se de fazer?

Pois paciência, ónde não onvér remédio.

Amanhã he día sãto, vámonos á cavállo ao câmpo.

De bóa mente, tẽmos alguẽm conhecido lá fóra pára agasallármos?

Conheço hum lavradór que tem huã adéga de vínho galhárda, irẽmos vèlla.

E se não estivér em cása, aónde acharẽmos alguã refeicãm.

Lá está bem pértto huã quinta de hum convênto de Frádes, eu bem conheço o Pádre procuradór, e se elle estivér em cása, não á nos faltará de comér nem de bebér.

Andár, vámos, estão os cavállos selládos? e os outros juméntos albardádos?

Túdo está aparelhádo, só fálta á huã das múlas a ferradúra.

Mánda o móço ao ferradór, que affente a ferradúra, e que vénha lógo.

Peter, carry that Mule to the Farrier, and bid him put on a new Shooe, and fasten the rest with what Nails are wanting.

Sir, it is already done, you may take Horse when you please.

Let us go first to the Village where the Farmer lives.

We are already in the Town, what is your Pleasure?

Dost hear? Go to that House with the green Lattice Windows, and enquire if Mr. J. V. be at home.

Who is at home here? Is Mr. J. V. at home?

No, Sir, he went early this Morning to the City, neither do I know when he will return.

Sir, I thank you, farewell; whether do you go now, Sirs?

Let us make haste to the Friar's Farm, and enquire for Father John the Steward.

I have been there, Sir, and they tell me that he is removed from thence to another Convent of the same Order, about Fourteen Leagues off, and that another Steward is put into his place.

O Pédro, leva esta mula ao ferrador, e dígalhe que pónha uma ferradura nova, e que assegure as de mais com os pregos que forem necessários.

Tudo já está feito Senhór, podem VM montar quando quizerem.

Vamos primeiro á aldea onde mora o lavrador.

Já estamos na villa Senhores, que mandam VM que eu faça.

Ouvi vos, vay á aquella casa com as janellas de rotulas verdes, e pergunta se o Senhór J.V. está em casa.

O de casa, está em casa Senhór J. V?

Não Senhór, foy ôje a cidade sendo pélla menhaa, nem sey quando virá.

Béijo as mãos de VM, Adeos: Adonde vamos agora Senhores?

Aviémonos de pressa á quinta dos Frades, e procurémos ao Frey João, o Padre procurador.

Fuy lá Senhores, e me dizem, que mudou-se dalli á outro convento da mesma ordem, acerca de quatorze léguas distante deste, e que outro procurador está constituído no seu lugar.

Why

Why this is worse still, and we have no other Shift but to look out for some Country Inn or Tavern to refresh our selves.

Opportunities do not always answer our Expectations, neither is there any Pleasure without some Disrelish.

Let us go forward to the next Town, and send the Boy to find out the best Inn, for there is no Pleasure in living upon the Air.

Where is the Inn-keeper, or Master of the House? Call him hither.

Hark you, Master of ours, have you any thing to eat? We have come a long Journey, and are almost famished.

Yes, Sir, please to come in, and see what will please you; how many are you in all?

We are four besides the Servants.

Will a Dish of Bacon and Eggs please you, or a Hen boiled or baked with Rice, or half a dozen of Chickens stewed?

Bring it all presently, for Hunger admits of no Delay.

Pois, isso vai de mal em peor, não ha outro remédio que bulcár alguma estallagem ou taverna para o nôsso agasalho.

Não corre o tempo á todas as cousas, nem ha gosto sem algum desgosto.

Vamónos adiente até a primeira villa, e mandemos o rapaz que procure a melhor estallagem, pois não ha prazer onde não ha comér.

Que de Senhór estallageiro, ou dono da casa? digalhe que venha acá.

O Senhór nôsso Amo, tem VM alguma cousa que comér, viámos de longe, e stámos quasi esfaimados.

Si Senhór, entrem VM e véjam se ouvér alguma cousa de seu gosto, quantos sam VM todos.

Sómos quatro, fóra dos criados.

Sérvelhes á VM hum prato de prezúnto com ovos? ou hua galinha cozida ou assada no fórnio com arroz? e méya dúzia de frangos afogados?

Vénha tudo de préssa, porque a boca não quer fiador,

Boy, come and lay the Cloth, and let us see what Wine you have.

You shall have it, Sirs; I believe it is very good, it is the best of this Scituation, and without any Mixture.

Which is best, your white or red Wine? Let us have a taste of both.

In my Opinion the red is best; it is a lighter Wine, and more agreeable to the Stomach?

Well then, bring in three Pints of red, and a pint and an half of white.

Is there any brown Bread in the House? If there be, bring me a piece; I had rather have brown than white.

If there be any thing for second Course, bring it, either Fruit, or your Little, or fresh Cheese from the other side of the Water; some sweet Meats, with a Bottle of cool Wine and Water.

Will you be pleased to have any thing else, Gentlemen? All that I have in the House is at your Service.

Master, we thank you, pray do us the Kindness to send your Ostler to us, that we may speak a Word with him.

O rapaz, venha pôr a mesa, e vejamos se o vinho tem préstimo.

VM serão servidos, creyo que vinho he excellenté, he o melhor do termo, e sem confeição nenhuma.

Qual he melhor, o vinho branco ou tinto? traiga a mostra de ámbos?

Tenho pára mi, que o tinto he melhor, he macio, e mais agradável ao estomago.

Pois, traiga huã canada do tinto, e dous quartilhos do branco.

Averá algum pão de rála em casa? se ouvér, traiga me hum pedaço, ántes quero pão-de rála que álvo.

Se ouvér alguã cousa de sobre mesa, que á traigas, seja fruíta, queijinhos de Monte-mor ou queijos frescaís de Alemtéjo, ou doces de manjar real, e marmeláda, com huã canéqua de vinho tinto esfriado com água de fonte serenáda.

Querem VM, Senhores, alguã cousa mais? tudo que tenho em casa está á ordem de VM.

A VM muitos ánnos, Senhor nóssó Amo, faça nos a mercé de dizer ao móço de estribaria que súa, que queremos fallárlhe. Hark

Hark you, Friend, have you look'd well after the Horses and the other Beasts since our coming in?

Yes, Sir; for my part I have been wanting in nothing, they have their Fill of Straw and Barley.

Very well, where is the Master of the House, that we may have our Reckoning?

Here I am, Gentlemen, you have to pay here within for Meat and Drink Three Crowns, or Nine Shillings sterling, and without in the Stable One Crown, or Three Shillings sterling.

Here is your Money, pray tell it, and let the Twelve Vintens or Half Crown, which is over and above, be shared among the Servants.

Your humble Servant, Gentlemen; when you please to pass by here, you have all your humble Servants at Command.

O Vossê, tem tratado bem os cavállos e os mais jumentos despois de entrarmos?

Senhór si, da minha parte não faltéy náda; tiveram de pálha e cevada em abundância.

Bem está, que de Dóno da casa? que vénha a conta do que devêmos?

Aquí estôu meus Senhores, tem VM acá dênro, de comer e beber tres cruzados novos, ou nove Shelins estarl, é lá fóra na estribaria, hum cruzado novo ou tres Shelins estarl.

Eylo hí o dinhéiro, conte o VM, e os dóze vinténs, ou o méyo cruzado que sobéja, repártafe éntre os criados.

Vivam VM mil ánnos Senhores, quando VM quizerem passár por este baíro, aquí tem tódos os seus criados prontos á súas ordens.

Another Dialogue between two Friends.

Hark you, Neighbour, do you go abroad to day? Or have you Business at home?

Outra Prática entre dous Amigos.

O Senhór vezinho, ouça me VM? vay VM fóra óje? ou tem que fazer em casa?

This Morning I must dispatch some Goods in the Custom-House, after Dinner we will talk more at Leisure.

What are the Goods which you dispatch?

I am to send home Two Boxes of Hose, one Box of Hats, and Twenty Pieces of Bays.

And if I have time I must make a Dispatch in the Fruit-Office of One Hundred Chests of China Oranges, Thirty of Lemons, and Twenty of sour Oranges.

Make haste then, it is late, the Custom-House hath been open above this Hour.

I am going, and as I pass by the Fish-Market, I will see if there be any Fish that is fresh to day, being fasting-day.

Well, go, and if you meet with any fresh Sturgeon, or a Turbet, order the buying of it, and I will dine with you.

Agreed, I'll stay for you till half an Hour after Twelve.

My Friend, your Servant, you are welcome, look here is what you longed for, two Pound of fresh Sturgeon, and

Esta manhã hey de despachar algumas fazendas na alfândega, depois de jantar fallaremos mais devagar.

Que fazendas sam que VM despacha?

Ey de mandar para a casa dous caixões de meás, huá caixa de chapéos e vinte peças de baetas.

E como tiver lugar, iréy ás Sete Casas, despachar na mesma de fructas, cem caixas de Laranjas de China, trinta de Limões, e vinte caixas de laranjas azedas.

Avia de pressa homem, já he tarde, ha mais de huá hora que Alfândega está aberta.

Já vou, e em passando pela ribeira, ou praça de peixe, veréy se ha alguma peixe fresca, hoje sendo dia de jejum.

Pois váya, e se achár alguma peixe solha, ou hum redoválho, mände comprarllo, e jentaréy com VM.

Estámas de acôrdo, e speraréy até a méya hora depois do méyo dia.

Criado meu Amigo, ténha VM boa vinda, eis aqui o que VM desejava, dous arateis de peixe solha, e
such

such a Turbet of the right cast, as I have not seen the like these six Months.

You only want three, the chief Requisites to compleat your Dinner, good Wine, good Oil, and good Butter.

Say not so, Sir, my Wine is extraordinary, it is from the other side, both well tasted and coloured, but I must confess my Oil and Butter are not the best.

Then send to my House, I have Florence Oil and Butter of a Barrel, chosen out of Two Hundred of these that last came from Ireland.

Call the Boy, and let him go presently, it grows towards One a Clock.

You Boy, go to my House, and bid my Man send me a Plate of Butter out of the middle of the Barrel, newly opened, and a little Flask of that Oil that stands in the corner of the Cellar.

I go, Sir, but must I not carry a Token? It may be he will not deliver it.

Take this Key for a Token, and bid him send it presently.

hum tal rodoválho pregado, que não tenho visto seu par estes seis mézes passados.

Só que lhe faltam sam as tres cousas principaes, bom vinho, azéite limpo, e boa manteíga.

Não diga tal Senhór, o meu vinho he excellente, véyo da banda dalém, he de bom gósto, e bem tinto, mas confesso que a manteíga, e mais o azéire não sam dos melhores.

Pois, mände á minha casa, tenho azéite de Florença, e manteíga de hum baril escolhido de dozentos daquelles derradeiros que viéram de Irlândia.

Cháma o rapaz, e que váya logo, já vay para hua hora.

O rapaz, va tu á minha casa, e diga ao meu móço, que mände hum prato do méyo daquelle barilinho de manteíga de nóvo aberto, e mais hum frasco de aquelle azéite que está no cantinho da adéga.

Eu vou Senhór, mas não hey de levár final? tal vez o móço não o entregará.

Tomáy ésta chave por final, e dizéy lhe, que o mände de pressa. Ma-

Manoel, go see if Dinner be ready, set the Chairs in order.

Please to seat your self, and excuse all Ceremony.

Bring a taste of the Wine first, to see what it is.

Upon my Life it is delicate, I have tasted none so good in any place.

How do you like the Fish? Help your self to some Sturgeon; there stands the Cruises with Oil and Vinegar, and there is Butter melted in another Plate.

It is a princely Fish, and looks white like the Flesh of Veal.

Shall I help you to some of the Turbet? It is very fresh and fat, and in the Opinion of most is no contemptible Fish.

Lord, Sir, it is one of the best that swims, and so well dress'd, that it tempts my Appetite.

Fill the Gentleman some Wine; they use to say, that Fish without Wine is Poyson.

Is there any Snow in the House? If not, put some Wine in the Well to cool.

There is, Sir, I bought Two Pounds to day, and

O Manoél, vay ver se o jentár está feito, e pónha os tamborêtes.

Aséntese VM, e não ája cerimónia.

Vénha priméiro huã vez de vinho, pára vérmos o que he.

Por vída mínha, he regalado, não ténho provado tão bom em nenhuã páрте.

Cómo lhe parece a péixe? páрта VM da péixe sólha? allí estão as galhétas com azéite e vinagre, e nótro práto tem mantéiga derretida.

He huã peixe Reál, e peréce álva cómo vitéla.

Quer que eu páрта pára VM do rodoválho? bem frêsko he, e górdo, nem no parecer comúm, he péixe desprezível.

Ouy Senhór, he huã das melhores que náda, e de tal módo guisáda que me ábre a vontáde de comér.

Enche vinho ao Senhór, foy dito nos témpos antepassados, que a péixe sem vinho he peçonha.

Ha alguã néve em cása? se não ouvér, méta vinho no póço pára esfriár.

Ha Senhór, óje com-préy dous arráteis, e estão se there

there are Two Bottles of Wine cooling.

Fill some cool Wine and Water.

After the Cloth is taken away, send your Boy to the Water-side to see for a Boat.

What for? Whether will you go? It is now late, and I believe no Boat to be found, by reason of the Procession this Evening.

Let him go see, I must go to Night on the other side of the Water, either to Coína or Carcilhas, in my way to Setubal.

If your Business be not too pressing, stay till to-morrow, and I will wait on you to Azeitão, which is more than half way.

I will stay with all my Heart, but we must know at what time the Tide will be made for us.

I have already sent to know when the Tide begins to flow to-morrow Morning, and the Boatman says it will be low Water at Five a Clock in the Morning.

Very well, we'll take Boat at Six, and with a favourable Wind we shall be there by Eight.

esfriando dúas garáfas de vinho.

Enche vinho frio com água ferenáda.

Depois de tirar a mesa, mande o rapaz á praya buscar hua fregata.

Paraque? adónde vay VM? já he tarde, é crêyo que não se achará fregata nenhuma por amor da procissão desta tarde.

Que váya ver, pois hey de ir esta noite á banda dalem, ou á Coína ou Carcilhas, de caminho á Setúbal.

Se o negócio não for muito apressado, espere até a menhaa e acompanharéy a VM té Azeitão, que vem á ser mais de metade de jornada.

Esperaréy be boa mente, mas avémos de saber á que horas serve a maré.

Já mandéy saber á que horas comecará enchérse a maré á menhaa pélla menhaa, e dizem os barqueiros que ás cinco horas de menhaa a maré estará vazia.

Bellamente, embarcarémos ás seis horas, e com o vénro na pópa estaremos lá ás oito.

Boy,

Boy, go see if there be any thing in the House to carry with us for our journey.

Yes, Sir, I have already put into the Boat a Hand-basket, with two cold Fowls, a couple of Bottles of Wine, and all other Requisites.

I wish we may find Beasts there to hasten our Dispatch.

There is no fear of that, there are Beasts always ready that wait for Passengers.

Hark you, Boatman, what time shall I get thither think you?

If it be now Six, we shall be there by Eight and a half, having both Wind and Tide for us.

Well then, let us go; farewell, Gentlemen, till our first lucky meeting.

Another Dialogue between two Friends upon several Matters.

GOD save you, good Sir, whether away so fast? I was told you were out of Town.

Sir, I am your humble Servant, I am going to the new Street about a little Bu-

O rapáz, va ver se ha alguma cousa na casa para o nosso viático.

Si, Senhor, ja meti na fregáta duas frangas assadas frias, duas canéguas de vinho com todo o mais necessário.

Quéyra deos que achemos lá bestas para aviarmos mais depressa.

Não aja medo disso, ali estão bestas sempre prontas esperando por passageiros.

O Senhor arráyz, á que horas (parêcelhe) chegaremos lá?

Ja que sam seis horas, estamos lá as oito e méyo, avêndo connosco o vento e a maré.

Ora vámos, a Deos Senhores até o primeiro feliz encontro.

Outra prática entre dous Amigos sobre várias cousas.

Salve Deos á VM meu Senhor, adonde vay tão depressa, ouvi dizer que estava fora da terra.

Criado meu Senhor, tenho hum negócio na rua nova, aonde vou agora, e

finest

finest; I have been abroad for a Day or two, and returned late last Night.

What Business have you that demands this haste? You are not going to be married, I hope.

No, Sir, he that thinks of marrying in this Age, hath need of clear Sight, and a perfect Understanding.

Why so, Sir? Is it now more dangerous than in former times?

Yes certainly, for the Women are now grown proud, and assume to themselves a despotick Power as their Right.

You say very well, Sir, and without doubt that House is in an ill Condition where that Sex predominates.

But let us leave off this idle Trivattle; you say you are going to the new Street; if your Business be not Matter of Secresie, I'll wait upon you.

Sir, you do me a great deal of Honour; I only go thither to speak with a Shopkeeper to buy me a new Suit of Cloaths.

What is the Shopkeeper's Name? Probably I may know him.

ettive fóra hum par de días, e óntem tornéy pára a cása á álta nóite.

Que negócio tem VM que péde tanta préssa? não he por ventúra pára casarse?

Não Senhór, quem tráta de casarse nésta éra, ha de mistér os ólhos do línce e o sízo dos sete sábios.

Paraqué Senhór? tem agóra mais risco e perigo que nos témpos passádos?

Si por certo, pois as mulhéres já alevantáráo as crístas, e por serem presumidas, quérem se ostentár por arbitrárias e soberanas.

VM diz muito bem, e sem dúvida, mal vay aquélla cáia ónde a róca mánda a espáda, e a galinha póde mais que o gállo.

Mas deixémos éstas parvoíces; VM diz, que vay a Rua nóva, se o negócio não for cóusa segreda, acompanharéy a VM,

VM me fáz mpyta honra, eu vou lá soménte pára fallár á hum mercadór de lógea, de comprárme hum vestído nóvo.

Cómo se cháma o Mercadór? tal vez será meu conhecido.

I think his Name is Bartholomew Redrigues, or something like it; I am not certain.

I know him very well, he lives in the middle of the Street, on the Right Hand, over-against the Insurance-Office.

Well then, let us go and do our Business.

God save you Mr. B. R. I come recommended to you by a Friend of yours, Mr. J. P. having Occasion for some things out of your Shop.

Sir, you are welcome, and the whole Shop is at your Service.

I have occasion for some fine Cloth to make me a Sute; have you any that is good?

Yes, Sir, I will shew you a Piece that I believe will please you.

Look you here is a piece, than which I believe there is not a better this Day in this Kingdom of Portugal; being very fine, well wrought, and of a pleasant Colour.

The Cloth is not bad, but the Colour doth not please me; I am no Friend to this Ash Colour, as being presently spotted.

Cúydo que se chãma Bertoloméu Roíz, ou tal, não o sey por certo.

Eu bem o conheço, mora no méyo da rua, á mão deréita, justamente de frente da casa dos Segúros.

Pois, vámonos, e tratemos o nosso negócio.

Guárde Déos a pessoa de VM Senhór B. R. venho encomendado á VM por hum amigo seu o Senhór J. P. por aver mister alguãas cousas de sua lógea.

Séja VM bem vindo, meu Senhór, e tudo que está na lógea tem ás suas ordens.

Hey de mister algum páno fino pára fazer hum vestido, tem VM algum que presta?

Tenho Senhór, mostrarei a VM huã peça que não lhe descontentará.

Eis aquí huã peça, e no meu parecer huã das melhores que ha este oje no Réyno de Portugal, por ser muito fino, bem lavrado, e de cor agradável.

O páno não he máo, mas a cor não me agrada, não sou amigo desta cor de cinzas, por logo encherse de nódoas.

Look

Look here, Sir, how do you like this other Piece ; it is of a more lively Colour, and more cheerful, for the Summer-time.

Yes, this I like ; how do you sell it a Còvado, and be at a Word with me.

Sir, I'll tell you, I cannot sell it under Two Milreas Five Hundred Reas a Còvado.

It is very dear, I know I can buy it cheaper in other places.

If you run the whole Street over, and find any so good, and of this make, for less Money, I'll give it you for nothing.

Hark you, Sir, I'll give you Two Mil. Two Hundred and Forty Reas, and am perswaded it can be worth no more.

Well then, not to use many Words, I will not let it go under Two Mil. Four Hundred Reas, altho' it were to my Brother.

Do you know how many Còvados will be sufficient to make a Sute ?

Truly I cannot tell, but I'll send and call a Taylor that lives close by in the Neighbourhood, and he will soon inform us.

Olhacá, Senhór, cómo lhe parece est'outra peça ? he de cor mais víva e mais alégre póllo verão.

Isso sy, a cómo vay o còvado ? e diágme em huá palávra ?

Eu lhe diréy a VM, não póssó vendéllo por ménos de dous mil e quinhénta reas o còvado.

He muito cáro, bem sey que póssó comprállo mais acomodádo em óutras pártes.

Se VM, corréndo pólla rúa, achár algúm tão bom e déste feitio. por ménos dinhéiro, eu lhó daréy por náda.

Ouçáme VM Senhór, darlhe ey dous mil dozén-tos e quarénta reas, e ténho pára mí que não póde valér mais.

Em fim, pára usár de brevidáde, não ey de largállo por ménos de dous mil e quátro céntos reas, a-índa que fósse ao meu jr-mão.

Sábe VM quántos còva-dos bastarão pára fazer hum vestído ?

Não sey por cértó, mas mandaréy chamár hum al-fayáte que móra aquí pér-tro na vezinhánça, e elle o lógo dirá.

How

How many Covados must I have to make the whole Sute?

You must have for Coat, Doublet and Breeches, Four Covados and an half.

What may be the Breadth of it? I believe I must have more.

No, Sir, it is a Yard and three Quarters broad, and I am sure Four to Five Yards are sufficient.

Very well, cut me off Five Yards, that none be wanting.

Here is just a Remnant of Five Yards.

See what it comes to, and I'll give you your Money.

Five Yards at Two Mil. Four Hundred Reas per Yard, amount to Twelve Milreas in Portugal Money.

How much is it in sterling or currant Money of England.

Twelve Milreas at Six Shillings Three Pence per Mil. make Three Pounds Fifteen Shillings sterling.

Here, tell your Money, and see if it be right.

It is, Sir, I humbly thank you, and I hope another time I shall have the same Honour.

Quántos covados hey de mistér póllo vestido inté-iro?

VM ha de ter pólla casaca, jubão e calções quátro covados e meyo.

Que largura terá? créyo que hey de mistér mais.

Não Senhór, tem de largura hum covado e tres quártos, e assegúrlhe, que quátro pára síncó covados bastarám.

Andár, cúrtame síncó covados, que não ája fálta.

Eis aquí hum retálho de síncó covados jústos.

Véja quánto impórta, e dár lhe ey o seu dinhéiro.

Síncó covados á dous mil e quátro céntos reas o covado cústam dóze milréas em dinhéiro de Portugál.

Quánto vem a ser em dinhéiro Estarl. ou moéda corrénte de Inglátérta.

Dóze milreas ou 12, 000rs á seis Shelíns e tres peuíques per mil, fazem tres líbras e quinze Shelíns Estarl.

Eys aquí, cónte VM o dinhéiro, e véja se está certo.

Está Senhór, á VM mil ánnos, e espéro que em outra occasiám teréy a mesma hónra.

APPENDIX

OF THE

Forms of Writing

Commonly used in Correspondence among them in the following manner.

THEY prefix the Characteristick Dom to all Christian Names, from the King to the meanest Titular Gentleman; as Dom Pedro, D. Francisco, D. Manoél, &c. and their Titles are attributed to them according to their difference of Quality: As Magestade, or Vossa Magestade, is only attributed to a King or Queen. Alteza, or Alteza Real to a Prince or Princess, Excellência to a Duke, Marquess, Vice-Roy or Ambassador Senhoria to a Count or Earl, and all other Gentlemen either by Blood or Dignity of Office and to all others Vossa Mercê, Vossê, Tu or Vos, according to their Degrees, Station, Acquaintance or Familiarity. As to Ecclesiastical Persons they attribute the Title of Eminência to a Cardinal; to an Archbishop or Bishop, Ilustríssima, or Ilustríssima Senhoria; and to all the Orders, as Provincials, Priors, &c. the Title of Reverência and Padernidade is most usual, with the same Characteristick Dom prefixed to their Christian Names, as Ao muito Reverendo Padre Frey Dom Manoél, or Frey D. Miguel, &c. and to all other Ecclesiastics, as Vigairos or Cúras, &c. either Reverência or mercê, ad libitum, in Writing or Conversation.

N

To

A hum Dúque por Agradecimento.

Excellentíssimo Senhor,

Não atrevo de offerecer a V. Exc. este limitado reconhecimento das merces que a sua bondade tem accumulado em meu favor, por quanto o excesso dellas he tão demasiado que me tem roubado de todas as occasiões de vingança. Para mim he basta que V. Exc. creya que antes avia eu de regeitar todos os gostos e interesses da minha vida do que a lembrança de suas larguezas; Bemto sey que V. Exc. ficon primeiro satisfeita em sy, cada vez que me tem favorecido, mas em quanto á taes alivios estou de todo desemparrado, sem mostrar o meu zelo em alguã empreza de confideração do seu servico; peço lhe que se me dê licença de importunár a V. Ex. de me engrandecer com a honra de suas ordens e mandados, que pello meu sincero e puntual comprimento dellas, saibase por certo que se V. Exc. for assim estremadamente generoso, eu não fico com menor sentimento, nem sou menos.

C. E. C. D. V. E.

A hum Marquêz pollo mésmo.

Excellentíssimo Senhor,

SE se esperasse que os meus agradecimentos fossem conformes e dinos das merces e honras com que V. Exc. foy servido de me favorecer, hey de pedir com rogos, que se me enfinem os termos; que de

IF
sh
your
most
po

To a Duke by way of Acknowledgment.

My Lord,

I Pretend not to make this offer of Gratitude to your Excellency for the Favours which your Goodness hath been pleas'd to crowd upon me, since their excess is such as obligeth me to be mute, and robs me of all opportunities of a suitable return; it is no little satisfaction to me, that you believe that I will sooner forget all the Pleasures and Interests of my Life, than the Remembrance of your Bounty: I very well know that your Excellency first pleas'd your self every time you oblig'd me; but since I am altogether incapable of such advantages, without endeavouring to shew you my Zeal in some considerable Service, I beg of your Excellency to give me leave to sollicite you at all times to honour me with your Commands, to the end, that by my punctual and innocent compliance, it may certainly be known, that if your Excellency be so highly generous, I am no less apprehensive, nor less,

My Lord,

Your Excellencies most Faithful
and Obedient Servant.

To a Marquess on the same.

My Lord,

IF it should be expected that my acknowledgments should be answerable to, or worthy of the Favours your Excellence hath been pleas'd to Honour me with, I most humbly beg to know the terms from your Excel-
lence;

pois de fabellos os possa retratar polla sua propria satisfacção; Confesso a minha fraqueza nos reconhecimentos de obrigações que devo, como tambem fico queixoso da minha desdita de faltarem as occasiões de desempenhar-me: Mas por quanto todas as obras e emprezas generosas levam consigo o seu premio, quero encarecer com silencio o que não posso declarar com palavras; nem posso mais do que inculcar continuadamente á memoria de V. Exc. a sua estremada nobreza e generosidade, e em toda a parte publicalla com a minha ambição de ser reputado de V. Exc.

O. M. C. E. S.

A hum Vizo-Rey sobre o seu alevantamento.

Excellentissimo Senhor,

Não quisesse descansar, nem passar com silencio entre huns aplausos tão geraes por ser obrigado de consoar com o voto comum e o contentamento universal que em toda a parte parecia á exaltação de V. Exc. á esta dignidade: Isso sem escrupulo confessar-lhe ha de todos, que sua Magestade foy servido de illustrar a V. Exc. com esta honra, por ser (ja ha muito) devida á suas mercimentos de suas proezas e façanhas affinaladas, e em tanto de todos aprovadas que os seus inimigos ficão condenados a hum silencio perpetuo; e sey por certo, ainda que tive tardança nestes meus parabéns, ninguem anticipou as testemunhas dos sentimentos que tinha de hũa alegria tão publica e affamada; e em como esta offerta de minha observancia foy antes effeito de zelo que de diligencia

lence, that I may exactly Copy them for your own Satisfaction; I confess my inability to express my resentments of the Obligations I stand indebted for, as well as I complain of the crossness of my Fortune, not to allow me occasions to acquit my self; but because great and generous Actions carry always their reward with them, I must inbaunce by my silence what I want Expressions for; and all that I can do is to mind your Excellence continually of your surprizing Generosity, and to spread it through all the corners of the World, together with my Ambition of maintaining the Character of being,

My Lord,

Your Excellencies most Humble
and Obedient Servant.

To a Vice-Roy upon his Advancement.

My Lord,

I Could not lye dormant or silent amongst the loud Acclamations of so general a Joy, being forced to join Voices with the common Vogue, and that Universal Contentment which everywhere shews it self at this your Excellencies Advancement; all the World must Confess that this was but an Act of Justice in his Majesty to confer that Honour on your Excellent Person, which was so long since a Debt to your Merit by your Noble Exploits and Enterprizes, and so highly approved by every body as must condemn your Enemies to an eternal silence; and I am certain, though I seem to come late in my Congratulation, yet no Man preceded me in the witnessing my Resentment of so publick a Joy; and as this offer of my Duty was rather the Effect of my Zeal than Diligence, so tho' it came something late, it would not

cia, por estes vagares não será mais desprezível; se não tivera outra cousa adiante de mim senão o feliz successo de V. Exc. tinha nesta occasião prevenido á todos os outros meus competidores, mas avendo comigo nada de tanto pezo e valor do que foy a grandeza e honra da pessoa de V. Exc. com as miuhas inclinações ao seu servigo, antes quiz dar a ventagem á minha propensão que á costume para renderme e mim mais valioso por inteireza que lisonja,

G. D. A. E. P. D. V. E.

A hum Embaixadór.

Senhor ou Excellentissimo Senhor,

NA minha ultima fiquy benaventurado nas novas tão desejadas da chegada de V. Exc. á não duvido do successo daquelle negocio importante do que agora se trata, sendo aviado e facilitado por seus modos e governo: Estou de aviso por via do meu amigo D. T. M. que os desenhos e as emprezas de novo traçadas e offerecidas se regeitaram por huas razões muy fracas e de pouco porte, e que se levantáram e criáram huas sospeitas sem fundamento do que o negocio fora mal representado á ambas as Partes, mas com tudo, sempre tive comigo por certo que as ordens e os memoriaes de V. Exc. Logo espalharám esta núvagem, e com sua clareza e inteireza escusarám toda a duvida que se entrepuzesse; Nas minhas pello correo da somana passada se aviza, que huas proposições por via dos medianeiros se ouvessem de ser offerecidas, mas á primeira vista taes foram e tão de sarrezoadas appareceram que não me quiz enfadar nem entrepôr naquella mateira, e contento me com esta

be less valuable: Had I had the prospect of nothing but your Excellency's Fortune, I had prevented in this action all my Competitors; but when I had my Mind busied upon nothing more than the consideration of the Greatness of your Character, and my Inclinations for your Service, I rather yielded to my own propensity than custom to make my self observable rather in Effect than appearance to be,

My Lord,

Your Excellency's

Most Obedient Servant.

To an Ambassador.

My Lord,

BY my last I was made happy with the long expected News of your Excellency's Arrival at and doubt not the success of that great Affair now in agitation, being facilitated by your Measures and Conduct, I understand by my Friend T. M. that the overtures lately made were rejected upon frivolous Reasons, and groundless Surmises raised, that things had been ill represented to both Parties; but I am very well satisfied that your Excellency's large Instructions will soon clear that doubt, and openly shew the World the sincerity of the Design. I had Advice by the last weeks Post of some Proposals to be made by way of Mediation; but the Terms at sight appear'd so disagreeable, that I lay aside all Thoughts of intermeddling in that Affair, and acquiesce in the Pleasure and Satisfaction of an Assurance, that upon your Excellency's appearance, all doubts would be removed, and the Affair carried on with so equal a Zeal and Prudence, as shall exclude all despair of a happy Conclusion. In my next I shall acquaint your Ex-

confiança e satisfacão, que a viuda de V. Exc. todos estes escrúpulos evaessem, e que o negocio se tratasse com tanto zelo e prudencia que não envesse duvida nenhuma de huã ditosa e desejada conclusão : Na minha priméira avizarey á V. Exc. o necessario tocante a conferencia com os Deputados, entretanto pollo de mais, espero as ordens,

B. A. M. D. V. Exc,

S. D. V. E.

A hum Conde ou Fidalgo titulado, nomeado á hum
Governo fora do Reyno.

Senhor,

E Stranhese muito que fortuna (ja ha tanto) se a costumou a zombarias, parecêdo neutra na repartição de seus beneficios, e poz detenças em galardoar com premios os merecimentos tão publicos e assinalados como sam os de Vossa Senhoria ; com tudo finalmente veyo a resolver consigo, e (sem lisonja) as empresas e façanhas tão fora do comum que sempre illustraram a sua pessoa, tem lhe dado á saber que devia a V. S. muitas e grandiosas doações, e os seus serviços publicos entre mil trabalhos e perigos apertaram tanto com ella nos sem requerimentos por merces, que não podia escusar de satisfazer a divida tão dilatada sem denunciaçam de guerra contra a sua virtude : Não duvido que V. S. tenha recebido o aplauso geral e os parabens da corte como de todo o Reyno ; e quanto á mim não posso declarár os meus em melhor forma que na certeza que tanto tomeey de prazer nas novas que V. S. tinha grangeado o seu desejo neste feliz socesso, como se tivera apresentado adiente de mi a ruina e destruiçam de tudo
que

cellence with the Particulars of our last Debate with Commissioners that were deputed for that end, and in the mean time wait for necessary Orders, as I am,

My Lord,

Your Excellencies

Most Obedient Servant.

To a Count, or Earl, or Gentleman of Quality, on his being sent abroad for a Governour.

My Lord, or Sir,

IT may seem strange that Fortune for so long a tract of time hath stood as it were Neuter in the disposal of its Favours, and made a demurr upon rewarding of so great and publick a Merit, as that of your Lordship is; however, at last it hath come to a resolution, and without flattery, your Extraordinary Performances have always acquainted it that it owed you many Signal Endowments, and the remarkable Services you have done the Publick, by mastering of Thousands of Cares and Difficulties, have been such close Solicitors to her, that she could no longer excuse Paying the Debt, without Declaring open War to your Virtue, I doubt not but you have received the Congratulations of the whole Court and Kingdom; and for my part I can declare mine no better, than by assuring you that I am as joyful to be a Witness of this your Advancement, as I should be a the Ruin of any thing I most abhor; I have always observed the bent of your Temper to incline you to great Attempts, of which I wish you may be one of the earliest and most signal Examples, that where others terminate

que me fosse mais detestavel e aborrecido; olhando com attento, sempre achei na sua illustre pessoa huã inclinação a proezas, e espero que V. S. seja hum dos primeiros e mais affamados exemplos, e que aonde os de mais acabam, esteja o primeiro degrao da subida a sua dinidade, e que os desenhos para ao bem de sua patria sejam de tanto pezo e cautela que procurem juntamente amor e admiraçam em todos, e particularmente nelle que não deseja mais que continuar-se na conta de seus menores Criados.

B. A. M. D. V. S.

S. D. V. S.

A hum Amigo por falta de correspondencia.

Senhor F. F.

L. 16. de

1701.

OS Votos solenes e promessas atrazadas de serviços e amizade em que estou empenhado, nesta occasiam me obrigaram á demandar á V. M. e pleitear por falta de suas cartas e correspondencia: Tenho para mi gue lhe nunca ha de faltar desculpa, mas porem, creya VM que tudo que se alegar (ainda que parecer muito arrezoado) nunca poderá pôr obstaculo aos meus queixumes; Bem sey que ordinariamente se dirá, que não ouve occasiam, socedeo o infortunio de adoecer-se, (o que no meu parecer) poucas vezes molesta a V. M. (salvante nas suas horas pensativas) ou o desviamento de algum negocio de pouco porte entreveyo, Mas tudo isto amonroado não baltará para huã justificação contra as minhas querelas, nem a mim dará satisfacão nenhuma, tanto que o que V. M. poderá fazer he de render-se por culpado e pedir perdão, e assim usará do melhor modo de conservar para sempre,

Senhór,

D. V. M. Ç. E. C.

nate you may make your first step and degree to Honour, and that the Services you design for your Country may be so considerable as may make the World equally love and admire you, and particularly him who Desires always to continue in the rank of,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's

Most Obedient

and Humble Servant.

To a Friend upon Neglect of Writing.

Mr. F. F. SIR,

L. 16.

1701.

THE ancient Vows of Service and Friendship I have made you, oblige me to Challenge you for your Neglect in Writing; I am of an Opinion that you will never want an Apology, but I would have you believe that whatever you plead (altho' never so Justifiable) will not be able to stop the Current of my Complaints, I know the common excuse to be want of opportunity, some little Indisposition of Body (which I am perswaded seldom troubles you, but in your thoughtful Hours) or some small Diversion of a trivial Business, not worthy of a Minutes Consideration, interverted; but the amount of all together is not a sufficient Justification for you against my Reproaches, nor any Satisfaction to me; therefore what I would have you to do, is to own your self guilty, beg Pardon, and so you take the easiest Method to preserve for ever,

SIR,

Your most Faithful

Friend and Servant.

To

A hum Correspondente na matéria de negocio,

Senhor F. F. L. 1700.

JA ha tempos que não tive nenhuma de VM, ainda que de minha parte não lhe faltey em nenhum correo da minha correspondencia pontual; na minha ultima avisey á VM o necessario tocante o negocio do que agora se trata, e tenho para mim que quanto mais depressa se faça o accordo, tanto mais agradavel parecerá a vista de hũa conclusão ditosa. Dey parte de todo o desenho ao meu Amigo M. D. ficando elle do mesmo parecer comigo, com este conselho, que não se descuyde de lançar mão da primeira boa ocaliam, e que se prosigua sem ter grandes duvidas e escriptulos; Pois em materias semelhantes, os vagares e dilacões muitas vezes se acham por danosas e perigosas; Na minha de 2 do corrente (via Olanda) apontey á VM as proposições que se me fizeram sobre o negocio antigo e ajustamento final com Senhor D. B. como tambem do progresso que se tem feito em liquidar as pretensões das avarias de Capitão T. H. na sua viagem de Veneza á Londres, o que tudo como espero acabarse ha com toda á brevidade; aqui está hum navio de partida para o seu porto, pello qual serey mais largo; Entretanto,

D. G. A. V. M.

S. D. V. M.

Outra do mesmo.

Senhor, F. G.

L.

1700.

AS de VM de 2 e de 12 do mez passado receby
em 5 do corrente pello Navio Capitão
J. B.

To a Correspondent upon Business.

Mr. F. F. SIR,

L

1700.

IT is now some time since I have been favoured with any from you, altho' I have been so Punctual as not to fail you one Post; in my last I advised you the necessary concerning the Business now in agitation; and my Opinion, is that the sooner you come to accord, the greater Prospect there will appear of an advantageous Issue. I have imparted the whole Design to my Friend Mr. D. who is of the same Opinion, and adviseth to take hold of the first proper Occasion, and to forward it without any hesitation; unreasonable delays very often proving of dangerous Consequence. I acquainted you in mine of the Second Currant by the way of Holland, with what overtures had been made to me about the old Negotiation and final Adjustment with Mr. D. B. as likewise what Progress I had made in settling the Pretensions of Cap. T. H. about his Avarages in his Voyage from Venice to London, and hope to bring both to a speedy Issue. We have a Ship ready to depart for your place, by which I shall Write you more at large, and in the mean time Kiss your hands, and remain,

S I R,

Your Humble Servant.

Another of the same.

T

Mr. F. G. SIR,

L

1700.

YOURS of the 2d and 12th of the last Month came to hand on the 5th Currant by the Ship

Capt.
J. B.

J. B. Mestre, e nellas adverto, que carregará VM abordo do primeiro bom navio destinado por esta Praça as fazendas que encomendey ao seu cuydado na minha ultima ; com esta vam mais mostras, mais o que lhe peço he de inculcar ao tintureiro que as cores tenham viveza e que sejam de dura ; na minha pello correo proximo passado mandey inclusa á VM a conta da venda da partida das meas de seda como tambem dos 3 caixotes de chapeos que me vierão consignados pello Navio A ; se se offerecerem mais de qualquer dos generos sobreditos, sendo acomodados, bem pode mandallos por serem agora pedidos, com esta condicão que sejam de modo e de bom feitio. tenho contratado por suas 20 pipas de azeite pello primeiros navios da casra, e as 20 pipas de vinho tinto com as 12 pipas e 3 quartos de branco ja estam abordo do Navio S. T. Capitão F. Mestre, (dos quaes a carregam vay inclusa, (e os conhecimentos iram pello correo) que com o primeiro bom tempo dará á vela, queyra Deos que chegue em salvamento : isso sendo o que por ora se offerece,

G. D. A. V. M.

S. D. V. M.

Outra do mesmo.

Senhor L. B.

L.

1700

TIVE a honra de suas de 15 do mes passado pello lo correo, e de 22 ditto pello Navio A. e J. pellas quaes recebi as suas ordens de carregar por seu risco e conta abordo do primeiro bom navio fazendo a viagem para Amburgo as caixas de açucars

J. B. Commander, and therein I take Notice that you intend to put on Board the next good Ship bound hither the Goods I recommended to your care in my last; herewith I send you more Patterns, but I would desire you to be Solicitous with your Dyer that the Colours may be lively and durable; by the last Ship I remitted you account Sales of the Parcel of Silk Stockings and the Three Boxes of Hats by the Ship A. and if you meet with a Parcel of either, or both to your mind, you may please to send them, being now in Demand; but great care must be taken of the fashion and make; I have taken care to secure your Twenty Pipes of Oil for the first Ships in the Season, and have put on Board the Ship M your 20 Pipes of Red, and 12 Pipes and 3 Hogsheads of White Wine, Capt. F. Commander, (of which the Invoice goes herewith, and the Bills of Loading shall be sent by the Post,) which will depart with the first fair Wind, and I hope will come safe to Hand; which being the necessary at present, I remain,

SIR,

Your Humble Servant.

Another of the same

Mr. L. B. SIR, L. 1700

I Had the Honour of yours of the 15th past by Post, and of the 22^d by the Ship A. and J. in both which, I take Notice of your Orders to Ship upon your Riscon and for your Account upon the first good Ship bound for Hamburg, 25 Chests of Mascavado Sugars, 6 of White,

Mascavados com 6 caixas de brancos e 50 rolos de Tabaco consignados aos seus amigos e correspondentes os Senhores T. B. e Comp. o que tudo a seu tempo será puntualmente cumprido: Pello Correo proximo passado remety a VM 2. letras de cambio, hũa por 11. Effarl. 250 e outra por 320 ditto, das quaes despois de chegadas não duvido de devido cumprimento; Pella primeira occasião avizarey a vm o necessario mais largamente,

D. G. A. V. M.

S. D. V. M.

Outra de mesmo.

Senhor T. F.

L.

1700

ESTOU devedor a duas de vm, huã dos 12 do mes passado pello Correo, outra de 27 ditto por mar, às quaes ambas esta sirva por reposta: Na primeira adverto os seus queixumes de dilações em mandar as contas das fazendas que (ja ha tanto) a mim vieram consignadas, e deveras não ha outra desculpa que se poderá alegar em meu favor senão o sobre salto de huã doença que me tem quasi amortecido e rendido incapaz de servirme á mim e mais á todos amigos: Com tudo, para a sua mayor satisfacção e descanso, nesta vay incluza a conta da venda e o netto procedido de todas as partidas, juntamente com a sua conta corrente, e ao pé della a rol das fazendas qua estam ainda em ser, com outra de todas as dividas, entre as quaes ainda que algumas sejam dilatadas, espero que nenhuma se achará por roim: Tocante ao que vm propoem na sua de 27 do mes passado do aumento e da melhoria dos negocios para estas partes, receyo

and 50 Roles of Tobacco, all consigned to your Friend^s and Correspondents there, Mr T. B. and Company which shall be duly complied withal, I remitted you by the last Post two Bills of Exchange, one for 250 l. Sterling, and the other for 320 l. Sterling, which upon their Receipt I hope will meet with due acceptance and Payment: In my next I shall advise you what offers more at large, and till then remain,

S I R,

Your most Humble Servant.

Another of the same.

Mr. T. F. S I R,

L.

1700.

I Am your Debtor to two of yours, one of the 12th of the last Month by Post, and the other of the 27th ditto by Shipping, to both which this may serve for Answer: In the first I take Notice of your Complaints of Dilation in sending your accounts of Goods so long since consigned me, for which I have no other Apology to make but my being surprized with a severe indisposition of Body, which rendered me for a long time unserviceable to my self and Friends; however for your entire satisfaction I send you here inclosed Accounts Sales, with the neat proceed of all the Parcels, together with your Account Currant, and at the foot thereof a Role of all Goods in ser and of what Debts are standing out; of which, altho' some may be Dilatory, yet I hope none desperate: As to what you mention in your last, concerning the Advance and Improvement of Trade to this place, I doubt whether the Project in this Con-juncture will take place, by reason of the uncertain and unsettled

receyo eu que nestes tempos revoltosos tera duvidoso ou nenhum effeito, á conta da incerteza dos estados vizinhos: o que poderey fazer neste particular he, de por vezes, avizar lhe a vim do que soceder em toda a materia de negocio por seu melhor governo, e pollo de mais entretanto espero as suas ordens,

A. Q. D. G.

S. D. V. M.

Hum escritinho que, vay aberto a hum vizinho ou ou amigo em qualquer ocaſiam.

A O Senhor G. S. que T. M. o seu servo e Criado lhe ja a S. M. as mãos mil vezes, e que lhe faça a mercê de lhe mandar pello Portador desta
sendolhe
precisamente necessario nesta ocaſiam, e sempre ficara muy prompto as suas ordens,

A. Q. D. G.

A Carta ou Instrumento de Procuraçam.

Saibam todos puantos este Instrumento ou Carta de Procuraçam virem, que eu A. B. de L. homem de negocio, tenho nomeado e constituido e por estes presentes, nomeo, ordeno, constituyo e faco o Senhor B. C. de o meu verdadeyro e legitimo Procurador, por mim e em meu nome e ao meu uso poder demandar, arrecadar e receber de T. B. de Mercador, a soma de a mim devida por dic-

unsettled State of things abroad; however I shall endeavour to Inform my self, and accordingly advise you for your better Government; in the mean time waiting your further Orders, I Kiss your Hands, and remain,

S I R,

Your very Humble Servant.

A short open Escrite or Messlage to a Friend or Neighbour for any thing upon occasion.

*T*O Mr. G. S. that T. M. is his most Humble Servant, and desires the Favour of him to send by the Bearer having at present a precise occasion for it, and he shall always remain obliged to him, as

His Humble Servant, &c.

A Letter of Atorneys.

*N*OW all Men by these Presents, That I A. B. of L. Merchant, have named, and constituted, and by these Presents do name, ordain, appoint, and make my trusty Friend, B. C. of Merchant, my true and lawful Attorney, for me, and in my Name, and to my Use, to demand, sue for, recover, and receive of T. B. Merchant, the Sum of £. to me due, and owing by and from the said R. J. giving, and hereby

to T. B. dando e por esta concedendo ao meu ditto Procurador o meu poder plenario e autoridade de exercitar e usar de todas taes auções e outras cousas em direito necessarias para a cobrança da ditta divida, e em meu nome de dar e fazer quitações ou outras descargas, e geralmente de fazer e excutar na materia sobre ditta tão plenariamente como se eu mesmo fizesse ou pudesse fazer, estando pessoalmente presente, ratificando, confirmando e outorgando tudo e qualquer cousa que o ditto meu Procurador legitimamente fizer ou causar de se fazer nella por estes presentes. Em testemunho do que Assiney e selley esta em aos 20 dias do mez de de 1700 Annos.

A. B. G.

Affinado e sellado adiente

de T. A. } Testimunhas.
M. B. }

A Carta ou o Instrumento de Fretamento.

ESTA Carta ou Instrumento de Fretamento contratado, feito aos vinte cinco dias do mez de de Anno de mil e setecentos do nascimento de nossa Senhora Jesu Christo &c. Entre T. B. Mestre (de baixo de Deos) do bom Navio nomeado dozentos e cincocenta toneladas de carga p. m. que ao presente esta surto e ancorado no Rio de de hua parte, e E. T. M. B. L. &c. homens de negocio da outra parte; Certifica, que o ditto Mestre ter dado em aluguer e fretado o ditto Navio aos ditto homens de negocio, e que elles os dittos homens de negocio tem o tomado em aluguer polla viagem

granting unto my said Attorney, my full Power and Authority to use and exercise all such Acts, Things, and Devices in the Law, as shall be necessary for recovering of the said Debt, and Acquittances, or other Discharges, in my Name to make and give, and generally to do and execute in the Premises, as fully as I my self might or could do, being personally present; ratifying, confirming, and allowing all, and whatsoever my said Attorney shall lawfully do, or cause to be done therein by these Presents. In Witness whereof, I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal, in this 20th of July 1700.

Per A. B. C. D.

Sealed and delivered

in the Presence of

T. A.

M. B.

The Copy of a Charter-Party of Affreightment.

THIS Charter-Party of Affreightment, indented, made the _____ of the Month of _____ Anno Domini _____ between T. B. Master (under God) of the Good Ship, or Vessel, called the _____ of the Burthen of _____ Tuns, or thereabouts, now riding at Anchor in the River of _____ of the one part; and E. T. M. B. L. &c. Merchants, of the other part; Witnesseth, That the said Master hath granted and letten the said Ship, to Freight unto the said Merchants, and that they the said Merchants have accordingly hired Her for the Voyage, and upon the Terms and Conditions following:

aos concertos e as condições seguintes; a saber, o ditto Mestre faz concerto, promete e outorga por elle mesmo, os seus Testamenteiros e Administradores, á e com os dittos homens de negocio, e qualquer delles, os seus, e qualquer dos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes por estes presentes; que o ditto navio forte e são de quilha, e bem e bastante-mente provido de mantimentos, enxarcias e gente, e aparelhado de todas as cousas convenientes e necessarias para fazella viagem pordiãnte declarada: Com o primeiro vento favoravel e bom tempo que Deos permitirá despois do dato destes presentes, partirá do porto de com todas as taes fazendas e mercadorias que os dittos homens de negocio ou os seus Constituintes entrementes carregaram ou meteram abordo delle, e com ella em dezeitura dará á vela e applicará ao como o vento e o tempo mais favorecerem ao ditto Navio na sua viagem; e em chegando tão perto do ditto lugar de elle o ditto Mestre ou os seus Constituintes dentro de Dias de trabalho (para se contarem logo despois de tal sua chegada) não somente descarregarão e entregarão as dittas fazendas e mercadorias metidas a bordo do ditto Navio ao sobre ditto, aos dittos homens de negocio, aos seus Feitores ou Constituintes ou a alguns ou algum delles em salvamento e bem acondicionadas (salvante o risco dos mares e o tolhimento de Principes e Governadores) mas também receberão, tornarão á carregar e tomarão abordo do ditto Navio de e dos dittos homens de negocio, dos seus Feitores ou Constituintes ou de alguns ou algum delles todas as taes fazendas e mercadorias que elles ou qualquer delles ali carregaram ou meteram abordo delle até o comprimento inteiro da carga do ditto Navio; a saber; tanto quanto bem sem poderá arrumar debaixo da cuberta, no conves, e adiente do masto grande (salvante só lugar pollos

That is to say, The said Master doth covenant, promise, and grant for himself, his Executors, and Administrators, to and with the said Merchants, and either of them, their, and either of their Executors, Administrators and Assigns, by these Presents; That the said Ship, strong and staunch, and well and sufficiently victualled, Tacked, Manned, and Apparelled, with all things meet, needful, and necessary for the performance of the Voyage hereafter mentioned, shall with the first fair Wind and Weather, which God shall send, after the Date of these Presents, depart from the Port of _____ with all such Goods and Merchandizes, as the said Merchants, or their Assigns, shall in the mean time lade and put on Board Her, and therewith directly sail and apply into _____ as Wind and

Weather shall best serve for the said Ship to sail: And being arrived as near to the said Place of _____

He the said Master, or Assigns, shall and will within _____ working-days next from and after

such Her Arrival to be accompted, not only unlade and deliver the said Goods and Merchandizes put on board the said Ship at _____ as aforesaid, into the said

Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns; or some or one of them, in safety, and well conditioned, (the Dangers of the Seas, and Restraint of Princes and Rulers excepted;)

but also shall and will receive, re-lade, and take on Board the said Ship, of and from the said Merchants,

their Factors, or Assigns, or some or of one them, all such Goods and Merchandizes, as they or any of them

shall there please to lade, and put on Board Her, to the said Ship's full and compleat Lading, that is to

say, As much as can conveniently be stowed in the whole Hold, and between Decks, afore the Main-mast, (room

only reserved for the said Ship's Provisions, Tackle and Apparel:)

And the said _____ working-days being expired, or the said Ship there sooner dispatched, (which first shall happen.) He the said Ma-

pollos mantimentos, enxarcias e aparelhos do ditto navio) e os dittos dias de trabalho sendo acabados ou o ditto navio sendo allí mais de pressa despachado (o que primeiro foceder) elle o ditto Mestre ou os seus Constituintes com a primeira boicaliam de tempo e vento favoravel em dereitura navegarão e tornarão á vir com o ditto navio e a sua carga do ditto porto de descarregar e recarregar de sobredito, ao porto de e aquí dentro de dias de trabalho, logo despois da entrada do ditto navio dada na alfandega desta ditta elle o ditto Mestre ou os seus Constituintes descarregarão e entregarão as dittas fazendas e mercadorias carregadas abordo do ditto navio ao seu descarregar e recarregar sobredito, aos dittos homens de negocio, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores ou Constituintes em salvamento (salvante o risco dos mares e o tolhimento de Principes e Governadores) e assim se acabará á ditta destinada viagem. E os dittos homens de negocio concertam, prometem e outorgam por elles mesmos e qualquer delles, os seus e qualquer de seus Testamenteiros e Administradores, ao e com o ditto Mestre, os seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes por estes presentes: Que os seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, Feitores ou Constituintes não somente descarregarão e recarregarão o ditto navio ao seu porto de descarregar e recarregar de sobredito, e despacharão e descarregarão o mesmo neste na maneira e forma acima declarada; e dentro dos certos dias e tempos sobrenomeados; Mas tambem por inteiro de todo o frete que se vencer, para se pagar e pedir por e durante esta presente destinada viagem; bem e verdadeiramente pagarão ou Coufarão que se pague ao ditto Mestre, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores ou Constituintes

ster, or his Assigns, shall and will with the then next opportunity of Wind and Weather, from her said unloading and relading Port of ^{afore-}said, directly sail, return, and come back with the said Ship and Lading unto the Port of ^{and here within} working-days, next after

the said Ship shall be entered in the Custom-house of this said ^{he the said Master,} or his Assigns, shall and will unlade, and deliver the said Goods and Merchandizes, laden on board the said Ship, at her lading and relading,

^{afore-}said, unto the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators or Assigns, in safety and well conditioned, (the Danger of the Seas, and Restraint of Princes and Rulers excepted) and so end the said intended Voyage. And the said Merchants do covenant, promise, and grant, for themselves, and either of them, their, and either of their Executors and Administrators, to, and with the said Master, his Executors, and Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents: That

^{their Executors, Ad-}ministrators, Factors, or Assigns, shall and will not only unlade and relade the said Ship, at her unloading and relading Port of ^{afore-}said, and dispatch and discharge the same at this

in manner and form as above express'd, and within the respective Days and Times above mentioned, but also shall and will, in full of all Freight to be due, payable, or demandable, for or during this present intended Voyage, well and truly pay, or cause to be paid, unto the said Master, his Executors, Administrators or Assigns ^{the Sum of}

^{of lawful Money of} in manner and form following: That is to say, part thereof within ^{days after the said} Ship shall be entered in the Custom-house of

Item, ^{more} thereof within ^{days then next following,} and

a continha de de dinheiro corrente de na maneira e forma seguinte. A saber parte delle dentro em dias despois da entrada do ditto navio dada na alfandega de Item mais delle dentro em dias proximo seguintes, e o restante do ditto frete inteiro dentro em dias logo despois da descarga do ditto navio aqui em sobredito. E acordase reciprocamente por e entre ambas as partes por elles mesmos, os seus particulares Testamenteiros, e Administradores que todos os gastos dos portos que se vencerem para pagarle ou pedirle, durante esta presente destinada viagem, faram pagos e satisfeitos na maneira e forma seguinte: A saber delles pello ditto homens de negocio, os seus Testamenteiros Feitores ou Constituintes, e o de mais delles pello ditto Mestre, os seus Testamenteiros ou Constituintes: Alem disso, por este se concerta que poderá ser e seja licito aos e pollos ditto homens de negocio, os seus Feitores ou Constituintes de reter o ditto navio em detença ao seu porto de descarga e recarga sobredito, e tambem a sobredito tanto tempo e tantos dias que se requieram, alem dos dias certos acima apontados salvo que nam passem os dias por inteiro: Elles os ditto homens de negocio, os seus Feitores e Constituintes por cada hum e cada tal dia pagando ao ditto Mestre ou aos seus Constituintes de dia em dia como mesmo se vencer para se pagar, qualquer cousa sobreditta em contrario non obstante; e pollo comprimento de todas e de cada hum das cousas acima declaradas (as quaes por parte e pollo que toca ao ditto Mestre, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores ou Constituintes, e cada hum delles, sam e devem de ser avidas, ridas, observadas e compridas.) O ditto Mestre se obriga a sy mesmo os seus Testamenteiros e Administradores, juntamente

and the remaining part of the said whole Freight with in
days next after the said Ship shall be
delivered of her Lading here at the said place above said.
And it is mutually agreed by and between the said
Parties to these Presents, for themselves, their several
Executors and Administrators, That all Port charges,
which shall grow due, payable, or demandable, during
this present intended Voyage, shall be paid and satisfied
in manner and form following: That is to say,
thereof by the said Merchants, their Executors, Factors,
or Assigns; and the other thereof by the
said Master, his Executors or Assigns. Further, it is
hereby agreed, That it shall and may be lawful unto
and for the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns,
to keep the said Ship in Demurrage at her unloading
and reloading Port above-mentioned; and also at
aforesaid, over and above the respective days afore-men-
tioned, such other time and number of days as shall be
requisite, so as the same exceed not the said days
in the whole. Then the said Merchants, their Factor,
for each and every such day, paying unto the said Mas-
ter, or his Assigns, a sum of lawful Money of the said place above said,
the same shall grow due and payable, any thing afore-
said to the contrary notwithstanding. And for the Per-
formance of all and singular the Premises, which on the
part and behalf of the said Master, his Executors, Ad-
ministrators, and Assigns, and every of them, are and
ought to be well and truly holden, observed, and per-
formed, the said Master doth bind and oblige himself,
his Executors and Administrators, together with the
said Ship, and her Freight, Tackle, and Apparel, unto
the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators,
and Assigns, and every of them, in the Sum or Penalty
of Pounds of lawful Money of
well and truly to be paid by these Presents. And like-
wise for the Performance of all and singular the Pre-
mises, which on the part and behalf of the said Mer-
chants, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns,

te como ditto navio, o seu frete, emarcas e aparelhos aos dittos homens de negocio, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, e cada hum delles, na forma ou pena de dinheiro corrente de para se pagar bem e verdadeiramente por estes presentes. E tambem pollo comprimento de todas e de cada hua das cousas sobredittas (as quaes por parte e pollo que toca aos dittos homens de negocio, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, Constituintes ou qualquer delles, sam e devem de ser guardadas, pagas e compridas;) os dittos homens de negocio se obrigam a sy mesmos, os seus Testamenteiros e Administradores, junta e separadamente com as suas fazendas que se carregaram abordo do ditto navio nesta presente destinada viagem, ao ditto Mestre, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, e a cada hum delles, na semelhante forma e pena de semelhante dinheiro corrente de para ser pago bem e verdadeiramente por estes presentes. Em testemunho do que as Partes sobredittas assinaram e sellaram reciprocamente á estas presentes Cartas de fretamento contratas, ao dia e anno primeiro em cima declarado.

Sellado e entregue

T. B. O.

adiante de

A. B. C. D.

A Police de Seguro.

EM o nome de Deos, Amen.

N. T.

tanto no seu proprio nome como por ou em o nome ou os nomes de todos e cada pessoa ou pessoas aquem o mesmo pertence, possa

or any of them, are and ought to be kept, paid, and performed: The said Merchants do bind and oblige themselves, their Executors, and Administrators, jointly and severally, together with their goods, to be laden on board the said Ship this present intended Voyage, unto the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, in the like Sum and Penalty of _____ of like lawful Money of _____ also well and truly to be paid by these Presents. In Witness whereof, the Parties aforesaid to these present Charter-Parties indented, have interchangeably put their Hands and Seals, the Day and Year first above written.

Sealed and Delivered

T. B. G.

in the Presence of

A. B. C. D.

A Policy of Assurance.

IN the Name of God, Amen.

as well in his own Name, as for and in the Name and Names of all and every other Person and Persons, to whom the same doth, may, or shall appertain, in part,

se ou poderá pertencer, em parte ou em todo, faz o Seguro, e causa á sy mesmo, e á elles; e á cada hum delles de assegurar-se, perdidos ou não perdidos

sobre qual-quer genero de fazendas e Mercadorias quaesquer, carregadas ou para se carregarem abordo do bom navio por nome da carga

de toneladas; p. m. do que he Mestre debaixo de Deos C. T. M. ou quem quer que for por Mestre no ditto navio ou por qualquer nome ou nomes o ditto navio ou o Mestre delle se nomea ou nomeará; principiando a ventura sobre as dittas fazendas e mercadorias do e logo despois de carregallas abordo do ditto navio

e assim se continuará e ficará até que o ditto navio com as dittas fazendas e mercadorias quaesquer chegar e as mesmas ahi descarregadas em salvamento; e sera licito pollo ditto navio, nesta viagem, de parar e deter-se em quaesquer portos ou lugares

sem prejuizo ao este Seguro. As dittas fazendas e mercadorias, por concerto, sam e seram avaliadas em sem que se dé outra conta dellas mesmas. Tocante as venturas e riscos com que nos os asseguradores contentamonos e que tomamos sobre nos nesta viagem, Ellas sam dos mares, das naos de guerra, de fogo, inimigos, Cossaios, ladroes, Roubadores, Jettezónas ou fazendas perdidas e deitadas no mar, letras de Marte, e contra Marte, sobrefaltos, tomadias no mar, citações, tolhimentos e detenças de todos os Reys, Principes e povos de naçam, condiçam ou qualidade qualquer, barratria e contrastes enganosas do mestre e dos marinheiros, e de todos os outros perigos, perdas e desfaltes que ja vieram ou que virão ao prejuizo, desaproveitamento ou dano das dittas fazendas e mercadorias ou de alguma parte dellas; e se á caso soceder alguma perda ou desaventura, sera licito aos Assu-
rados

or in all, doth make Assurance, and causeth himself, and them, and every of them, to be Insured, lost, or not lost,

upon any kind of Goods and Merchandize whatsoever, loaden or to be loaden aboard the good Ship called the
Burthen

Tuns, or thereabouts, whereof is Master under God for this present Voyage

or whosoever else shall go for Master in the said Ship, or by whatsoever Name or Names the said Ship, or the Master thereof, is or shall be named or called; beginning the Adventure upon the said Goods and Merchandize from and immediately following the Loading thereof aboard the said Ship

and so shall continue and endure until the said Ship, with the said Goods and Merchandize whatsoever, shall be arrived

and the same there safely landed. And it shall be lawful for the said Ship, in this Voyage, to stop and stay at any Ports or Places

without Prejudice to this Insurance. The said Goods and Merchandizes, by Agreement, are and shall be valued at

without further account to be given for the same. Touching the Adventures and Perils, which we the Assurers are contented to bear, and do take upon us in this Voyage, they are of the Seas, Men of War, Fire, Enemies, Pirates, Rovers, Thieves, Jettezons, Letters of Mart and Counter-Mart, Surprizals, Takings at Sea, Arrests, Restraints and Detainments of all Kings, Princes, and People, of what Nation, Condition, or Quality soever, Baratry of the Master and Mariners, and of all other Perils, Losses and Misfortunes, that have or shall come, to the Hurt, Detriment or Damage of the said Goods and Merchandize, or any part thereof. And in case of any Loss or Misfortune, it shall be lawful to the Assured, Factors, Servants and Assigns, to sue, labour and travel, for, in
and

rados, Feitores, Servos e Constituintes de demandar, fazer diligencias e trabalhar por, em, e acerca da de- feza, salvamento e recobrimento das dittas fazendas e mercadorias ou de alguã parte dellas sem prejuizo ao este seguro; aos gastos do que nos os Asseguradores contribuiremos cada hum conforme a sua conthia nelle assegurada; e nos os Asseguradores estamos de acordo e concerto que esta escritura e seguro tera tanta força e valor como a mais autentica Police ou escritura de Seguro dantes feita em qualquer parte de ~~esta~~ E assim nos os Asseguradores somos contentes e por este prometemos e obrigamos cada hum por sua propria parte, os nossos Erdeyros, Testamenteiros e fazendas, aos Assegurados, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes pol- lo verdadeyro comprimento das cousas acima decla- radas, confessando que estamos pagos e satisfeitos do que se nos deve á conta deste Seguro por

Em testemunho do que nos os Asseguradores affina- mos ao pé deste com as conthias asseguradas em, &c.

Eu A. B. sou contente com este Seguro }
por com libras Estarl. L. em de } 100 l.
1701.

T. M.

O Conhecimêto.

Digo eu T. B. Vezinho de
Mestre ou Capitão que sou do Navio que De-
os salve por nome que ao presente
esta furto e ancorado no porto de para
com o favor de Deos seguir viagem ao porto de
aonde he minha direita descarga,
que

and about the Defence, Safeguard, and Recovery of the
said Goods and Merchandise, or any part thereof,
without Prejudice to this Insurance; to the Charges
whereof the Assurers will contribute each one ac-
cording to the Rate and Quantity of his Sum herein As-
sured. And it is agreed by us the Insured, That this
Writing and Assurance shall be of as much Force and
Effect, as the surest Policy or Writing of Assurance
heretofore made in London or elsewhere in
England, and the Assurers are content-
ed, and do hereby promise and bind our selves each one
for his own part, our Heirs, Executors, and Goods, so
the Assured, their Executors, Administrators, and As-
signs, for the true Performance of the Premises, con-
fessing our selves paid the Consideration due unto us for
this Assurance by

.O. A.

In Witness whereof, we the Assurers have subscribed
our Names and Sums Assured in

I A. B. am contented with this Assurance?
for One hundred Pounds. Witness my Hand,
T. M.

~~A Bill of Lading~~

A Bill of Lading
Shipped by the Grace of God, in good Order, and
Well-conditioned by in and upon the
good Ship called the whereof is Master,
under God, for this present Voyage and
now riding at Anchor at
bound for To say
being

que he verdade, que receby, e tenho Carregado den-
 to do ditto Navio debaixo de cuberta enxuto e bem
 acondicionado de ~~mercado~~ Mercado da Marca de fora, o qual me obrigo e pro-
 meto, levando-me Deos á bom salvalmento o ditto
 Navio ao ditto porto de entregar em nome do sobre-
 ditto ~~de T. M.~~ T. M. ~~auzente~~ a quem seus
 poderaveis pagando-me de frete
 Para assim cumprir e guardar, obrigo minha pessoa
 e bens e ditto Navio, com correza do qual dey tres
 conhedimentos de hum rheor, afinados por mim
 ou por meu Escrivão, hum comprido os outros não
 valham a Reito sem ~~em~~ de
 1701. Anos. Do conhedendo não sey.

A. G.

O Instrumento ou Escritura, de compromisso.

A todos quantos este presente Instrumento ou Es-
 critura de Compromisso virem, de nos os Acre-
 dores de G. M. Mercador de Saude: Em
 como o ditto G. M. ao presente fica devendo e em
 dereito deve á nos os dittos Acredores d'elle o ditto
~~G. M. varias e diversas fomas de dinheiro, &c.~~ As
 quaes em razam de muitas dividas e algumas dellas
 muy grandes, que ~~tambem~~ em derito se lhe devem
 á elle, nem se podem arrecadar sem alguã dilaçam
 de tempo, e por ~~setem~~ algumas dellas, irreperáveis
 sem demanda, elle está por ora muito debilitado
 de fazer pagamento á nos os seus dittos Acre-
 dores da nossa inteira e justa divida conforme
 sua vontade e desejo; ao respeito do que, elle á no
 pede com todo o encarecimento que nos os ditto
 Acredo

being Marked and Numbered as in the Margent; and are to be delivered in like good Order and well-conditioned, at the aforesaid Port of

(the Danger of the Seas only excepted) unto Mr. [Name] or to his Assigns, he or they paying for the said Goods with Primage and Avarage, as is accustomed. In Witness whereof, the Master or Purser of the said Ship hath affirmed to Three Bills of Lading, all of this Tenour and Date; the One of which Three Bills being accomplished, the other Two to stand void. And so God send the good Ship to her desired Port in Safety. Amen. Dated in [Month] on [Day] of [Month] 1701.

Inside and Contents unknown.

A. G.

A Letter of License.

TO all People, to whom this present Writing shall come, We the Creditors of G. M. of Merchant send greeting: Whereas the said G. M. at this present time, doth stand indebted, and justly oweth unto us the said Creditors of him the said G. M. divers and sundry Sums of Money, &c. Which by reason of many Debts, and some of them very great, that are likewise justly owing unto him, and cannot be had or recovered without some Respite of Time, and some of them not without Suit, he is very much dis-inabled at present to make Payment unto us the said Creditors our whole and just Debt, as he seemeth willing and desirous; in Consideration whereof, he instantly desireth us, That we the said Creditors, and every of us, would be pleased to give and grant unto the said G. M. his Exe-

Acredores, e cada hum de nos fôsemos servidos de
 dar e conceder á elle o ditto G. M. aos seus Te-
 stamenteiros, Administradores ou Constituintes, tan-
 ta largueza ou dilacão de tempo pollo pagamento
 e fatisfaçam de nossas dividas particulares que lhe
 parecer justo á razão pollo alcance e cobrança das
 dittas dividas. A saber ; que nos e cada hum de
 nos ficassemos contentes á tomar e receber de nossas
 dividas inteiras em _____ para se repar-
 tirem em _____ partes, para se paga-
 rem em _____ pagamentos diversos, na
 maneira e forma seguinte. A saber, o primeiro pa-
 gamento della ha de ser _____ e o re-
 sto pagar-se ha em _____ proximo
 pollo inteiro pago e fatisfaçam das dittas dividas es-
 pecificadas. E pollo mais plenario comprimento dos
 varios pagamentos sobredittos em tal maneira e for-
 ma com á cima se limita e declara, ao verdadeiro
 intento destes presentes, elle o ditto G. M. ao ou
 antes do _____ será obrigado á nos os
 dittos acredores na mesma conformidade, por huã
 obrigação que far-se ha na melhor forma de de-
 reito com todos e cada hum dos pagamentos na
 maneira em cima limitada, hum certo lugar ou lu-
 gares convenientes de nos os dittos Acredores no-
 meados e determinados, e a pena de cada huã das
 obrigações ha de ser dobrada da soma inteira inclu-
 za nella mesma para ser a nos entregue e á cada
 hum de nos, os nossos Testamenteiros ou Constitu-
 intes, ao ou antes do _____ proximo
 seguinte ao dato deste: Por esta causa saibase ; que
 nos os dittos Acredores aqui em baixo assinados, e
 cada hum de nos para sy em particular, e por seus
 Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes ao
 respeito do em cima especificado e declarado, por
 estes presentes de vontade propria consentimos, con-
 tratamos, prometemos e concordamos ao e com o
 ditto G. M. os seus Testamenteiros, Administra-
 dores

cutors, Administrators, or Assigns, such Liberty or Respite of Time for the Payment and Satisfaction of our several Debts, as he thinketh reasonable, for the obtaining, getting, and recovering of the said Debts, viz. That we and every of us, would be content to take, and accept of our whole Debts in _____ to be divided in _____ parts, to be paid at several Payments, in manner and form following, viz. The first Payment thereof to be _____ and the residue to be paid at _____ next in full Payment and Satisfaction of the said several Debts: And for the more full Performance of the said several Payments aforesaid, in such manner and form as is above-limited and declared, according to the true meaning of these Presents, he the said G. M. shall and will, at or before the _____ become bound unto us the said Creditors respectively, by one Obligation in due form of Law to be made, including all and every the Payments in such sort as is above-limited, at some convenient Place or Places _____ by every of us the said Creditors to be nominated and appointed, and the Penalty of every Obligation to be double the whole Sum included in the Condition of the same to be delivered to us, and every of us, our Executors or Assigns, at or before the _____ next ensuing the Date hereof: Know ye therefore, that we the said Creditors, whose Names are here under-written, and every of us for his own part, and for his Executors, Administrators and Assigns, for the Consideration above specified and expressed, do by these Presents willingly Consent, Covenant, Promise, and Agree to and with the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents, That we the said Creditors, and every of us, our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, shall and will accept of the said G. M. his Executors, and Administrators, and Assigns, all and every of the said Debts and Sums of Money by the said G. M. unto us, and every of us, owing and paying upon such Obligations,

res e Constituintes, por estes presentes que nos os dittos Acredores, e cada hum de nos, os nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, aceitaremos do ditto G. M. dos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, todas e cada hua de taes dividas e conthias de dinheiro do ditto G. M. á nos e cada hum de nós, devidas e vencidas na vertude de taes obrigações, segurança ou seguranças sobredittas, para se pagarem em tal modo e maneira, e aos taes dias e tempos que acima se limitão e requerem. E alem disso, que nos os dittos Acredores e cada hum de nos, os nossos, e cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes em conformidade, ao entregue da ditta Obrigação á nos e á cada hum de nos e á cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, ao custo do ditto G. M. os seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, sellaremos affinaremos e na melhor forma de direito entregaremos ao ditto G. M. a nossa geral e sufficiente descarga, para ser rendida por elle o ditto G. M. os seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes ao dato e á limitação antes do dia e dato desta Obrigação nova; em testemunho do que á esta temos affinado e sellado ao dia e no anno

&c.

Londres de 1701. por 300 Milreas.

A Letra de Cambio.

A Vista desta minha primeira Letra de Cambio pagará VM ao Senhor T. M. ou ordem, a conthia de trezentos Milreas em dinheiro Corrente de Portugal, o valor, recebido de Senhor T. D. á tempo fará bom pagamento, lançando a na conta como por avizo de

Ao Senhor T. M. Mercador em Lixa,

S. D. V. M.

T. M.

tions, Assurance, and Assurances, as aforesaid, to be paid in such manner and sort, and at such days and times, as is above-limited and required. And further, that we the said Creditors, and every of us, our, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns respectively, upon the delivery of the said Obligation to us, and to every of us, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, shall and will, at the Charge of the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, Seal, Subscribe, and in due form of Law Deliver to the said G. M. our sufficient General Release, to be rendred by him the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, to bear Date and Limitation before the Day of the Date of this New Obligation, to be made for the Debt. In witness whereof, we have hereunto set our Hands and Seals. Dated the
of &c.

London of 1701. for 300 Milreas.

A Bill of Exchange.

AT Sight of this my first Bill of Exchange, please to
Pay to Mr. T. M. or order, the Sum of Three
hundred Milreas in Carrant Money of Portugal, Value received of Mr. T. D. at time make good payment, placing it to Accompt as per advise from,
To Mr. T. M. Merchant in Lisbon.

S I R,

Your H. S.

T. M.

FINIS.

...Affidavit and Affidavit, as aforesaid, to be
 paid in such manner and at such time and
 times, as the Court shall direct and require. And further
 that in the said Affidavit, and every of them, and
 every of the said Affidavits, Administrators, and Affidavit
 respectively, upon the delivery of the said Affidavits to us
 and to every of us, and every of our Executors, Ad-
 ministrators, and Assigns, shall and will, at the Charge
 of the said G. M. our Executor, Administrator, and
 Assigns, Seal, Subscribe, and in the form of a Law De-
 liver to the said G. M. our sufficient General Release
 to be retained by him the said G. M. our Executor,
 Administrator, or Assigns, to bear Date and Laminated
 on before the Day of the Date of the said Obligations
 on to be made for the said Obligations, and the
 said Obligations set out in the said Release. Dated the
 28th of June 1701.



London of 1701. for 300 Millions.
 A Bill of Exchange.
 At Sight of this my Bill of Exchange, please to
 Pay to Mr. T. M. or order, the Sum of Three
 hundred Millions in Current Money of Portugal; Na-
 tional of Mr. T. D. at time made good payment,
 please to be accounted as per advice from.
 To Mr. T. M. M.
 S. R.
 Your H. S.
 T. M.

VOCABULARY

IN

English and Portuguese.

Of Rational Creatures: De
Creaturas Racionais.

AN Angel: O Anjo.

A Spirit: O Espírito.

A Man: O Homem.

A Woman: A Mulher.

A Boy: O Rapaz, moço.

*A Girl: A Rapariga, mo-
ça.*

A young Man: O Moço.

An old Man: O Velho.

A Giant: O Gigante.

A Dwarf: O Anão.

Of the Parts of a Man:
As partes de hum ho-
mem.

THE Body: O Corpo.

The Soul: A Alma.

Skin: A Pelle.

Flesh: A Carne.

A Bone: O Osso.

*Marrow: O Miolo e tutá-
no.*

A Vein: A Vêa.

A Sinew: O Nervo.

The Head: A Cabeça.

The Skull: A Caveira.

The Crown: A Moléira.

The Hair: O Cabello.

Hair of the Body: O Pelo.

*A curled Lock: A Guedel-
ha.*

*The Temples: As Fontes
da cabeça.*

An Ear: A Orelha.

The Forehead: A Testa.

*The Eyebrow: A Sobran-
cêlha.*

An Eyelid: A Pestana.

An Eye: O Olho.

*The Apple of the Eye: A
Menina do Olho.*

The Nose: O Nariz.

Q

The

The Nostrils : As ventas dos narizes.

A Cheek : A Queixada.

The Face : A Fâce, cara.

The Countenance : O Rosto, donaire.

A Beard : A Bárba.

A Lip : O Béico.

The Mouth : A Boca.

Breath : O Báfo.

The Gums : As Gingívas.

A Tooth : O Dente.

The Tongue : A Língua.

Spittle : O Cuspínho.

The Throat : A Garganta, o pápo.

The Chin : A Bárba sem penúgem.

The Neck : O Pescóço.

The Shoulder : O Hómbro.

An Arm : O Braço.

An Armhole : O Sobáco.

An Elbow : O Corovelo.

The Hand : A Mão.

The Hollow of the Hand : A Palma da mão.

A Span : O Pálmo.

The Fist : O Punho.

A Joint : A Junta.

A Knuckle : O Nó dos dedos.

A Thumb : O Polegár.

A Finger : O Dêdo.

The Fore-finger : O Dêdo junto ao polegár.

The Middle-finger : O Dêdo de méyo.

The Fourth-Finger : O Dêdo do anel.

The Little-Finger : O Dêdo meminho.

A Nail : A Unha.

The Right Hand : A Mão deréyta.

The Left Hand : A Mão esquerda.

The Breast : O Péito.

A Pap : A Máma.

A Nipple : A Têta, o espícho.

A Bosom : O Séo.

A Side : A Ilhárga.

A Rib : A Costella.

The Back : As Cóstas.

The Back-bone : O Espinháço.

A Lion : O Lómbro.

The Belly : O Vêntre, a barriga.

The Navel : O Embígo.

A Thigh : A Cóxa da perna.

A Knee : O Joélho.

A Leg : A Perna.

The Calf of the Leg : A Barriga da perna.

The Shin : A Canêla da perna.

The Ankle : O Artélho.

A Foot : O Pé.

A Toe : O Dêdo do pé.

The Heel : O Calcanhár.

The Sole of the Foot : A Plânta do pé.

The Brain : O Miólo da cabeça.

The Stomach : O Estômago.

The Heart : O Coração.

The Lungs: O Bôfé.
The Liver: O figado.
Blood: O Sâgue.
Flegm: A Fréima.
Choler: A Cólera.
Melancholy: A Malenco-
 nia.
The Kidneys: Os Rins.
The Spleen: O Báço.
The Gall: O Fel.
The Bowels: As entrânhas.
The small Guts: As Trí-
 pas.
The Bladder: A Bexíga.
Urine: A Ourína.

Of Diseases: De Do-
 êncas.

A Disease: A Doença.
A Physician: O Médi-
 co.
Physick: A Mezinha.
A Chirurgeon: O çurgião.
An Apothecary: O Boticá-
 rio.
Pain: A Dor.
A Fever or Ague: A Fé-
 bre.
Head-ach: A Dor da ca-
 bêça.
A Cough: A Tósse.
Madness: A Doudice.
Tooth-ach: A Dor dos
 dentes.
Bloody-Flux: Cámaras de
 sangue.

The Stone: A doença de
 pédra.
The Pleurisie: O Prioris-
Jaundice: A Terícia do
 ênça.
The Gout: A Góta dos
 pés.
The Dropsie: A Hydrope-
 sia.
The Consumption: A Tífi-
 ca.
The Falling-Sickness: A
 Góta coral.
The Cramp: O Pálmo.
The Palsie: A Parlesia.
The Scurvy: O Escorbúto.
The Plague: A Péste.
A Fit: A Cesâm.
The Leprosie: A Lépra.
The Small-Pox: As Bexí-
 gas.
The Measles: O Serámpe-
 lo.
A Scab: A Sárna.
A Sore: O Sinal de ferída.

Of the Senses: Dos
 Sentidos.

THE Sight: A Vista.
The Hearing: O Ou-
 vido.
The Smell: O Cheiro.
The Taste: O Gósto.
The Touch: O Tóque.
Colour: A Cor.
A Stink: O Fedór.

A Sweet Smell: O Bom
chéiro.

A Smell: Chéiro.

A Sound: O Som.

A Relish: O Sabór.

Laughter: O Riso.

Weeping: O Choro.

Sigh: O Sospíro.

Whispering: O Zonido.

The Memory: A Memória.

The Phanſie: A Fantasia.

Sleep: O Sono.

Watching: A Vigia.

A Dream: O Sonho.

Of Cloathing: De Vestido.

A Garment: A Vestidura.

Apparel: O Vestido.

Cloth: O Páno.

Linnen: O Páno de linho.

Silk: A Seda.

Thread: O Fio e os línhos.

An Hat: O Chapéo.

A Cap: O Barréte.

A Peruke: O çabelléiro.

An Hatband: A Róſca,
cinto, &c.

An Hairlace: A Fita da
tôuca.

A Fan: O leque.

An Hood: A Tôuca.

An Ear-ring: A Arrecáda.

A Neck-Jewel: O Colár
de buro.

A Chain: A Cadéa.

A Bracelet: A Manilha.

A Spangle: A Lámina.

A Band: A Vólta.

A Shirt or Smock: A Ca-
miſa.

A Wastecoat: A Vêſte.

A Doublet: O Jubão.

A Sleeve: A Manga.

A Button: O Botão.

A Jacket: O Pelotinho.

A pair of Breeches: Os
Calçoéns e as brágas.

A Point: A Atáca.

A Girdle: O cinto.

A Skirt: A Barra da vé-
ſte.

A Gown: A Roupêta.

A Cloak: A Cápa.

A Coat: O Pelôte.

A Riding Coat: A Cápa
de camínho.

A loose Gown: O Roupão.

A Glove: A Lúva.

Stockins: Méas.

A Garter: A Faixa.

A Shooe: O çapáto.

A Shooestring: A Corrêa.

A Boat: A Bôta.

A Spur: A Espôra.

A Slipper: A Chinéla.

Socks: Escarpíns, fôcos.

A Buskin: O Borzeguim.

An half Shirt: A Camiſôte.

A Cravat: A Crevata.

Button-holes: As Casas de
botões.

Shoe-buckles: Fivêlas de
çapátos.

Of Meat : De Manjares.

FOOD : O Manjâr e comer.

A Table : A Mésa.

A Table-cloth : A Toálha da mész,

A Napkin : O Guardanapo.

A Trencher : A Tríncha.

A Saltfellar : O Saléiro.

Salt : O Sal.

Bread : O Pam.

Crust : A Códea.

Crumb : O Miólo.

A Knife : A Fâca.

A Dish : O Práto.

A Pottinger : A Tigéla.

A Spoon : A Colhér.

Pottage : O Cálido.

Milk : O Léite.

Cream : A Náta.

Butter : A Mantéiga.

Cheese : O Queijo.

Flesh : A Carne.

Beef : Vâca.

Veal : Vitéla.

Mutton : Caméiro.

Lamb : Carne de Borrégo.

Pork : Pôrco.

Venison : Veádo.

Bacon : O Toucínho.

A Pudding : A Morcéla.

A Sausage : O Salchiche.

A Cake : O Bólo.

Fine Flower : A Flór ou o ôlho da farinha.

Fritter or Pancake : O Filhó.

A Tart : A Tórta e escarpeáda.

Vinegar : O Vinagre.

Oil : O Azéite.

An Olive : A Azeitóna.

A Caper : A Alcaparra.

Sweetmeats : Dóces.

A Breakfast : O Almôço.

A Dinner : O Jantár.

A Beaver : A Merénda.

A Supper : A Cêa.

A Feast : O Banquète.

A Guest : O Hóspede.

A Bason : A Bacia.

An Ewer : O Gornil.

A Towel : A Toálha.

Of Drink : De Beber.

Drink : O Beber, a Bebida.

Wine : O Vinho.

Syder : O Vinho de maçãs.

Perry : O Vinho de péras.

Beer or Ale : A Cervéja ou Alla.

A Cup : O Copo.

A Flaggon : O Frásco.

A Jug : O Púcaro e a bilha.

A Bottle : A Garráfa.

*Of the Understanding, Will,
&c. Do Entendimêto,
Vontade, &c.*

THE *Mind* : A Mente.
The Understanding : O
Entendimêto.

The Reason : A Razão.

Appetite : O Apetite.

Faith : A Fé.

Wisdom : A Sabedoria.

Art : A Arte.

Opinion : A Opinião.

Judgment : O Juízo.

Mistaking : O Erro.

The Will : A Vontade.

Love : O Amor.

Hatred : O odio.

Desire : O desejo.

Loathing : O Fastio.

Joy : A Alegria.

Sadness : A Tristeza.

Fear : O Medo.

Boldness : O Atrevimento.

Trust : A Confiança.

Hope : A Esperança.

Despair : A Desesperação.

Anger : A Ira.

Pleasure : O Prazér.

Shame : A Vergonha.

Mercy : A Misericórdia.

Envy : A Euvéja.

Of Kindred : De Parentesco.

Wedlock : O Casamén-
to.

Marriage : As Vódas.

An Husband : O Marido.

A Wife : A Mulher casada.

A Bachelor : O Solteiro.

A Virgin : A Virgem.

A Bridegroom : O Espôso.

A Bride : A Espôsa.

A Bride-man : O Padrín-
ho das vódas.

A Bride-maid : A Madrin-
ha dos noivos.

A Wooer : O Namorado.

A Portion : A Dote.

A Bride-chamber : A Cá-
mara dos noivos.

A Widower : O Viúvo.

A Widow : A Viúva.

A Father-in-law : O Só-
gro.

A Mother-in-law : A Só-
gra.

A Son-in-law : O Génro.

A Daughter-in-law : A
Nóra.

A Father : O Pay.

A Mother : A May.

A Son : O Filho.

A Daughter : A Filha.

A Brother : O Irmão.

A Sister : A Irmã.

A Brother-in-law : O Cun-
hado Irmão do ma-
rido.

A Step-father : O Padrasto.

A Step-mother : A Madrá-
sta.

A Step-son : O Enteado.

A Step-daughter : A En-
teáda.

A Grandfather : O Avó.

A Grandmother : A Avó.

Unkle by Father : O Tío,
Irmão do pay.

Aunt by Father : A Tiá,
Irmãa da may.

Unkle by Mother : O Tío,
Irmão da may.

Aunt by Mother : A Tiá,
Irmãa da may.

Cousin by Father : O Pri-
mo, filho de Irmão.

Cousin by Mother : O Pri-
mo, filho de Irmãa.

Nephew : O Nêto, Sobrinho.

Niece : A Nêta, Sobrinha.

Kin by Blood : O Parênte.

Kin by Marriage : Chegá-
do por Parentesco.

A Husband's Brother :
Cunhado.

A Brother's Wife : A Cun-
hada.

Ancestors : Os Antepassá-
dos.

Posterity : Os Vindouros.

An Heir : O Erdêiro.

An Orphan : O Orfão.

A Bastard : O Filho Ba-
stardo.

Of an House : De Casa.

A House : A Casa.

A Palace : O Paço.

A Cottage : A Cabana e
choupana.

A Stone : A Pédra.

A Brick : O Tijólo.

Chalk, or Lime : A Cal.

A Wall : A Parêde.

A Comer : O Canto.

A Porch : O Portál.

A Gate : A Pórta.

A Door : A Pórta.

A Back-door : O Postígo.

A Knocker : O Martêlo do
ferro.

A Latch : A Alavança.

A Chink : A Grêta e fenda.

A Lock : A Fechadura.

A Key : A Cháve.

A Bar : A Tranca.

An Hinge : A Concêyra
da pórta.

A Threshold : O Umbral
da pórta.

A Post : O Estêo.

A Bolt : O Ferrólho.

Glass : O Vidro.

A Window : A Janêla.

A Casement : O Gelosia.

The Ridge : O Cúme.

A Tower : A Torre.

An Arch : A Bóbada.

The Roof : O Telhado.

The Inner Roof : O Fôrro
da casa lavrado.

A Slate : A Lágua.

A Tile : A Telha.

A Beam : A Tráva.

A Rafter : A Rípa.

A Board : A Táboa.

A Lath : A Látá.
A Pillar : A Colúna.
A Pavement : O Sólho da
 cása.
The Inner Room : A Recá-
 mera.
An Hall : A Sala.
A Parlour : A Recámara.
A Kitchen : A Cozinha.
A Bake-house : A Cása de
 forno.
A Larder : A Despensa.
A Cellar : A Adéga.
A Chamber : A Câmara.
Stairs : Escadas.
A Study : O Escritório.
An Inn : A Estalagem e
 pousada.
A Tavern : A Taverna.
A Victualling-house : A
 Cása de pátio.
A Spittle : O Hospital.
A Shop : A Lógea e tenda.
A Gallery : O Corredór,
 a galaría.
A Garret : O Eyrádo.

Of Household Stuff : Do
 Fáto ou da Alfáya de
 Cása.

A Chair : A Cadéyra.
A Stool : O Poyál.
A Bench : O Banco.
A Seat : O Assento.
A Cushion : A Almoçada.
A Table : A Mésa.

A Cupboard : A Copéira,
 o almário.
A Cupboard-cloth : A Al-
 catifa, tapete.
A Chest : A Arca.
A Coffey : A Cesta.
A Desk : O Estánte.
A Trunk : A Cesta encou-
 rada.
A Box : A Cáixa.
A Cabinet : A Bocéta, e o
 escriotinho.
A Press : A Rouparia.
A Case : A Caixinha.
A Basket : O Cesto.
A Hand-basket : A Alcófa.
A Flasket : A Frasqueira.
A Vessel : O Váso.
A Hogshead : O Quárto.
A Pipe : A Pipa.
A Barrel : O Barril.
A Tap : A Machofemea.
A Spigot : O Esguícho.
A Piercer : O Trádo.
A Cork : O Sóbro e a rol-
 ha.
A Chimney : A Chaminé.
Soot : A Ferrúgem e fulú-
 gem da chaminé.
A Grate : A Gráde.
A Spit : O Espeto.
An Oven : O Forno.
A Furnace : A Fornálha.
A Kettle : O Caldeirão.
A Chafing-dish : O Brase-
 iro.
A Frying-Pan : A Sartão.
A Flesh-hook : O Gáncho.

A Ladle : O Golherão.
A Grater : A Rapadoura.
A Strainer : A Coadeira.
A Mortar : O Gral.
A Pestle : A Mão de gral.
A Sponge : A Espónja.
A Besom : A Bafoura.
A Pot : A Panella.
A Pipkin : A Panellinha.
A Fireshovel : A Pá de ferro.
A Pair of Tongs : A Tenáz.
A Pair of Bellows : O Fole.
A Bed : A Cama.
A Bedstead : O Leito.
A Rug : A Cacheira.
A Cradle : O Berço.
Tapestry : Páños de raz.
A Canopy : O Pavilhão.
A Mat : A Esteira.
A Sheet : O Lancól.
A Blanket : O Manto.
A Coverlet : A Cobertura.
A Pillow : O Cabeçal.
A Course-Bed : O Colchão.
A Curtain : A Cortina.
A Chamber-pot : O Ourinól.
A Privy : A Privada.
A Candle : A Candea.
A Candlestick : O Castiçal.
A Wax-taper : O Círio.
A Torch : A Tócha.
A Lamp : A Alámpada.
A Distaff : A Róca.
A Spindle : O Fúso.
A Wheel : A Róda.
A Reel : A Dobadoura.

A Pair of Sheers : A Tifoura.
A Comb : O Pentem.
A Curling-iron : O Ferro de encrepar cabellos.
A Looking-glass : O Espelho.
A Needle : A Agulha.
A Pin : A Alfinete.

Of a School : De Escola.

A Schoolmaster : O Mestre de escola.
An Usher : O Mandador.
A Scholar : O Dicipulo.
A Schoolfellow : O Condicipulo.
The Master's Chair : A Cadeira.
A Form : A Classe ou Ordem.
A Seat : O Banco.
A Desk : A Estante.
Teaching : O Ensino.
Learning : A Doutrina.
A Book : O Livro.
A little Book : O Livrinho.
A Leaf : A Folha.
A Side : A Banda da folha.
A Margent : A Margem.
A Library : A Liyrraria.
A Bookseller : O Livreiro.
A Printer : O Impressor.
A Paper : O Papél.
A Sheet : A Folha de papél.

A Quire : A Mão.
A Ream : A Rézma.
A Pen : A Pena.
A Nib : O Apáro.
A Penknife : O Canivete.
A Pencil : O Pincel.
Ink : A Tinta.
An Inkhorn : O Tinteiro.
A Blot : O Borrão.
A Point : O Ponto.
A Letter : A Létra.
A Syllable : A Sílaba.
A Word : A Palávra.
A Sentence : A Sentença.
A Lesson : A Lição.
Constructing : A Explicação.
Parsing : A Examação.
A Rule : A Régua.
An Exercise : O Exercício.
A Theme : O Tema.
Prose : A Prósa.
Verse : O Verso.
An Orator : O Orador.
A Poet : O Poeta.
A Proverb : O Adágio.
An History : A História.
An Almanack : O Calen-
 dário.
A Table : A Patrânha.
A Satchel : O currao.
A Table Book : Os Memo-
 rias.
A Truant : O que está fo-
 ra de escola sem licen-
 ça.
A Dunce : O Boto.

Of Time. De Tempo.

T I M E : O Tempo.

An Hour : A Hora.
An Hour-glass : O Relógio
 de-areá.
A Clock : O Relógio.
A Dial : O Relógio de
 Sol.
Half an Hour : A méya
 Hora.
A quarter of an Hour :
 Hum quarto de Hora.
A Moment : O Momento.
A Day : O Dia.
Break of Day : A Manhã.
Sun-rising : O Nacente do
 Sol.
Morning : A Alva.
Noon : O Méyo Dia.
Sun-setting : O Sol pósto.
Evening : A Tarde.
Twilight : O Lulco e fúscio.
A Night : A Noite.
A Week : A Somana.
Sunday : O Domingo.
Monday : A Segunda.
Tuesday : A Fereça.
Wednesday : A Quarta.
Thursday : A Quinta.
Friday : A Sésta.
Saturday : O Sabbado.
An Holiday : O Dia Santo.
A Work-day : O Dia de
 trabalhó.
A Month : O Mez.
January : Janeiro.

February :

February: Fevréyro.
 March: Março.
 April: Abril.
 May: Máyo.
 June: Júnho.
 July: Julho.
 August: Agósto.
 September: Setémbro.
 October: Outúbro.
 November: Novémbro.
 December: Dezémbro.
 A Year: O Anno.
 The Spring: A Primavera.
 The Summer: O Verão.
 Fall of the Leaf: O Outono.
 Winter: O Inverno.
 Childhood: A Meninice.
 Youth: A Manceba.
 Manhood: A Mocidade.
 Old Age: A Velhice.
 An Age: A Era dos tempos.

Of the Elements: Dos Elementos.

FIRE: O Fogo.
 Heat: A Calma, o estúpido.
 A Flame: A Chama, Labareda.
 A Spark: A Faísca.
 A Firebrand: O Murrão.
 A Brand quenched: O Tição.
 A dead Coal: O Carvão.

A burning Coal: A Brasa.
 Ashes: A Cinza.
 Smoke: O Fumo.
 Wood: A Lenha.
 Water: A Água.
 Rain: A Chuva.
 The Rainbow: O Arco da Vélha.
 A Fountain: A Fonte.
 A Bridge: A Ponte.
 A Brook: A Enxurrada.
 A River: O Rio.
 The Bank of a River: A Ribancêira de Rio.
 The Sea: O Mar.
 The Ocean: O Mar alto e o Oceano.
 The Sand: A Areia.
 A Shallow: O vao e o baixo de Mar.
 A Sea-weed: O Argaco.
 A Wave: A Onda.
 A Whirl-pool: O Rodomimho e pégo.
 A Drop: A Gota.
 A Shore: A Praya.
 A Bay: A Enscada e baía.
 A Pool: O Tanque.
 A Marsh: A Lagoa.
 A Deluge: O Dilúvio.
 The Air: O Ar.
 The Sky: O Céu.
 Light: A Luz.
 The Sun: O Sol.
 A Sun-beam: O Arqueiro.

- The Moon* : A Lúa.
New Moon : A Lúa nóva.
Full Moon : A Lúa cheia.
An Eclipse : O Eclypse.
A Star : A Estrella.
A Constellation : A Constellação.
A Cloud : A Nuvem.
Darkness : As Trévas.
The East : O Oriente.
The West : O Occidente.
The South : O Méio-dia e zul.
The North : O Norte.
A Mist : A Névoa.
Fair Weather : A Serenidade.
Calm Weather : A Calmaria.
A Tempest : A Tempestade.
A Wind : O Vento.
A Storm : A Tormenta.
A Whirlwind : O Pé de vento.
A Gentle Wind : A Viração.
The East-wind : O Vento d'Este e Oriental.
The North-wind : O Vento de Norte.
The South-wind : O Vento de zul.
The West-wind : O Vento d'Oeste.
The Shower : A Chuva e o Chuveiro.
An Isicle : A Gota de água geada.
- Frost* : A Geada.
Ice : O Caramelo.
Dew : O Orvalho.
Snow : A Néve.
Hail : O Pedrisco, a Sará-iva.
Thunder : O Trovão.
A Thunder-bolt : O Rayo, a Pedra do corisco.
Lightning : O Relâmpago.
Earth : A Terra.
An Earthquake : O Terremoto.
A Mountain : O Monte.
A Valley : O Válie.
Dirt : A Lama.
Clay : O Barro.
Dust : O Pó.
An Hill : O Outeiro.
A Cliff : A Costa e Ladeyra.
A Rock : O Rocha.
A Bank : O Montão.
Gravel : A Areia grossa.
A Gravel-pit : O Areal.
Chalk : O Barro branco e gyz.
A Way : O Caminho, e Estrada.
A Path : O Atalho.
A Track of a Cart : A Carreira e o carril.
-
- Of Shipping* : De Navios.
- A Ship* : O Navio.
A Galley : A Gale.

A Skiff : O Bârco e o Es-
quife.
A Boat : O Batel.
A Cock-boat : A Barqueta.
A Ferry-boat : O Bârco car-
reteiro.
A Scutler : O Batel de
hum sô remeiro.
A Pair of Oars : O Batel
de dous remeiros.
An Oar : O Rêmo.
A Fleet : A Frôta.
The Fore-deck : A Próa.
The Stern : A Pôpa.
The Keel : A Quilha.
The Decks : As Cubertas.
The Hatches : O Convés.
A Cabin : A Camarote.
The Helm : O Leme.
The Stem : O Esporão.
A Mast : O Mástia.
The Main-yard : A Vêrga.
A Sail : A Vêla.
Main-sail : A Vêla grân-
de.
A Pulley : O Carrilho
pôle.
A Rope : A Corda.
A Cable : A Amarra.
A Jack : Os Galhardêtes.
The Streamer : A Bandeira.
An Anchor : A Ancora.
The Lanthorn : A Linterna.
A Pole : A Vâra.
The Pump : A Bomba.
The Sounding-line : O Prú-
mo.
The Ballast : O Lâstro.

The Lading : A Carga.
The Compass : O Compas-
so de marear.
A Pilot : O Piloto.
The Master : O Mestre.
A Mariner : O Marinhe-
iro.
A Passenger : O Passagêiro.
A Rower : O Remeyro.
A Ship-wright : O Archi-
tecto de Navios.
Shipwrecked : O Naufra-
gante.
Shipwreck : O Naufrágio.

Of Metals : De Metaes.

METAL : O Metal.
Mines : Minas.
A Digger : O Cavador.
Gold : O Ouro.
Silver : A Prata.
A Mine of Gold : A Mina
de ouro.
Brass : O Latão.
Iron : O Ferro.
Steel : O Aço.
Lead : O Chumbo.
Tin : O Estanho.
Copper : O Cobre.
Coral : O Corál.
Quick silver : O Azouge.
White Lead : O Alva-
de.

Of

Of Virtues and Vices. De
Virtudes e Vícios.

Virtue. A Virtude.

Vice. O Vício.

Wickedness. A Maldade.

Temperance. A Temperan-
ça.

Fortitude. A Fortaleza.

Justice. A Justiça.

Chastity. A Castidade.

Modesty. A Mesuraçã.

Bashfulness. A Vergonha.

Humility. A Humildade.

Civility. A Cortezia.

Truth. A Verdade.

Liberality. A Liberalidá-
de.

Magnificence. A Magni-
ficência.

Industry. A Indústria.

Diligence. A Diligência.

Patience. A Paciência.

Constancy. A Constância.

Friendship. A Amizade.

Concord. A Concórdia.

Peace. A Paz.

Pity. A Misericórdia.

Mercifulness. A Clemên-
cia.

Thankfulness. A Grati-
dão.

Godliness. A Piedade.

Honesty. A Bondade.

Charity. A Caridade.

Folly. A Parvoíce.

Craft. A Astúcia.

Deceit. A Sagacidade.

Guile. O Engano.

A Knave. O Bargante.

Pleasure. O Prazer.

A Glutton. O Comilão.

Gluttony. A Glotonia.

Drunkennes. A Bebedice.

Wantonness. O Laçiva.

Adultery. O Adultério.

An Harlot. A Manceba
de calado.

Pride. A soberba.

A Lie. A Mentira.

A Liar. O Mentiroso.

Sauciness. O Desavergon-
hamento.

A Bussbody. O Bulebole.

A Trifler. O Que trata de
ninharias.

Trifles. As Vaidades.

Thriftiness. A Regra.

Lavishness. A Luxúria.

Covetousness. A Cobiça.

Rashness. A Temeridade.

Cowardice. A Fraqueza de
coração.

Sloth. A Preguiça.

Negligence. O Descuido.

Fickleness. A Pouca fir-
meza.

Stubbornness. A Contu-
mácia.

Enmity. A Inimizade.

War. A Guerra.

Unthankfulness. A Ingrá-
tidão.

A Thief. O Ladrão.

A Robber. O Salteador.

A Pick-pocket : O Cúrta-bólfas.

A Church-robber : O Sacrílego.

A Villain : O Villám róim.

Ungodliness : A Impiedáde.

Of Birds : De Pássaros.

A Bird : O Pássaro.

A Bird's-bill : O Bico da áve.

A Wing : A Afa ou áza.

A Feather : A Pena.

Down : A penúgem.

A Spur : A Espórá.

An Egg : O Ovo.

A Shell : A Cáscá.

A Quill : A Pena.

A Claw : A unha.

A Nest : O Ninho.

A Cage : A Gayóla.

A Fowler : O Caçador de áves.

Birdlime : O Víscó.

A Bat : O Morcégo.

A Blackbird : A Mélroa.

A Capon : O Capão.

A Chough : A Grálha pequéna.

A Cock : O Gállo.

A Crane : O Gróu.

A Crow : A Grálha.

A Cuckoo : O Cúco.

A Diapper : O Mergulhão.

A Dove or Pidgeon : A Pómba.

A Turtle-dove : A Róla.

A Ring-dove : O Pómbó trocáz.

A Dove-house : O Pombál.

A Duck : A Adem.

An Eagle : A Águia.

A Falcon : O Falção.

A Goldfinch : O Pintasilgo.

A Goose : O Páto.

A Griffin : O Grifo.

A Gull : A Gaivóta.

An Hawk : O Açór.

A Hen : A Galínha.

A Heron : A Gárça.

A Jackdaw : A Gralhíha.

A Kingfisher : A Pícapéixe.

A Kite : O Minhóto.

A Lapwing : A Tarambóla.

A Lark : A Cotovia.

A Nightingale : O Rouxinól.

An Owl : A Curúja.

A Scrich-owl : O Búfo.

An Ostrich : O Avestrúz.

A Parrot : O Papagáyo.

A Partridge : A Perdiz.

A Peacock : O Pavám.

A Pelican : O Pelicáno.

A Pheasant : O Faisão.

A Phoenix : O Fenís.

A Pye : A Péga.

A Plover : O Tarambólo.

A Quail : O Codorníz.

A Raven : O Córvo.

A Night-raven: A Curúja ou Búfo.

A Snite: O Narcéijo, Francolim.

A Sparrow: O Pardál.

A Starling: O Estorminho.

A Stork: A Cegonha.

A Swallow: A Andorinha.

A Swan: O Córne ou Císne.

A Teal: O Marréco.

A Thrush: O Tórdo.

A Titmouse: O Chamaris.

A Turkey: O Perú.

A Vulture: O Abútre.

A Wagtail: A Pézpita.

A Woodcock: A Galinhóla.

Of Beasts and Insects: De Féras, bichos e animaes sem sangue.

A Beast: A Bésta e féra.

A Labouring Beast: O Jumento.

Cattel: O Gádo.

A Herd: A Manáda de gádo.

An Hide: O Couro.

A Horn: O Córno e a Pónta.

A Hoof: A Unha.

A Mane: A Cóma.

A Bristle: A Seda de porco.

A Tail: O Rábo e a Cauda.

An Ant: A Formíga.

An Ape: O Bugio.

An Ass: O Asno.

A Wild Ass: O Asno montéz.

A Badger: O Texúgo.

A Bear: O Urso.

A Bee: A Abélha.

Honey: O Mel.

An Honeycomb: O Fávo.

A Hive: A Cólmea.

A Sting: O Ferrão.

A Drone: O Zangão.

A Swarm: O Enxame.

Bee-wax: A Cera.

A Beetle: O Escaravélho.

A Butterflie: A Borboléta.

A Beaver: O Castór.

A Camel: O Camélo.

A Cat: O Gáto.

A Caterpillar: A Lagarta das vides.

A Coney: O Coélho.

A Crocodile: O Crocodilo.

A Dear: O Córco, a Córca.

A Fawn: O Filho da Córca.

A Hart or Stag: O Cérvro.

A Hind: A Cérvra.

A Dog: O Cam.

A Bitch: A Cadélla.

A Whelp: O Cachorro.

A Mastiff: O Raséiro.

<i>A Spaniel</i> : Cao de caça das aves.	<i>A Hornet</i> : O Abespaõ.
<i>A Mungrel</i> : O Cao mestiço.	<i>A Horse</i> : O Cavállo.
<i>A Dog's Collar</i> : O Colár do Cao.	<i>A Mare</i> : A Egoa.
<i>A Muzzel</i> : O Cabrésto.	<i>A Gelding</i> : O Cavállo capado.
<i>A Dragon</i> : O Dragão.	<i>A Race-horse</i> : O Cavállo de carreira.
<i>A Dromadary</i> : O Dromedário.	<i>A Nag</i> : A Fáca.
<i>An Elephant</i> : O Elefante.	<i>An Ambling Nag</i> : O Quartão.
<i>An Evet</i> : A Largartixa.	<i>A Hackney-horse</i> : O Cavállo de aluguer.
<i>A Ferret</i> : O Forão.	<i>A Pack-horse</i> : O Cavállo de bagagem.
<i>A Flea</i> : A Púlga.	<i>A Horse-keeper</i> : O Estribeiro.
<i>A Flie</i> : A Mofca.	<i>A Halter</i> : O Cabrésto.
<i>A Fox</i> : O Rapósa.	<i>A Horse-leech</i> : A Sarnibixuga.
<i>A Frog</i> : A Rãa.	<i>A Libbard</i> : O Leão pardo.
<i>A Glow-worm</i> : O Cagalume.	<i>A Lion</i> : O Leão.
<i>A gnat</i> : O Mosquito.	<i>A Lionsess</i> : Leãoa.
<i>An He-goat</i> : O Cabrambóde.	<i>A Lizzard</i> : A Lagartixa.
<i>A She-goat</i> : A Cabra.	<i>A Louse</i> : O Piólho.
<i>A Goat-herd</i> : O Cabreiro.	<i>A Magot</i> : A Lendíz.
<i>A Kid</i> : O Cabrito.	<i>A Mole</i> : A Toupéira.
<i>A Grasshopper</i> : A Cigarra.	<i>A Mele-hill</i> : O Formigueiro.
<i>A Hare</i> : O Lébre.	<i>A Monkey</i> : O Bugio.
<i>A Hedge-hog</i> : O Ouriço cachéiro.	<i>A Moth</i> : A Tráça.
<i>A Hog</i> : O Pórco.	<i>A Mouse</i> : O Ratinho.
<i>A Hog sty</i> : O Chiqueiro de pórcos.	<i>A Dormouse</i> : O Arganáç.
<i>Hog's-dung</i> : O Estérco de pórco.	<i>A Mouse-trap</i> : A Ratoeira.
<i>A Hog-herd</i> : O Porquero.	<i>A Mule</i> : O Mú.
<i>A Boar</i> : O Pórco montéz.	<i>A Nit</i> : A Lende.
<i>A Sow</i> : A Pórca.	<i>An Ox</i> : A Boy.
<i>A Pig</i> : O Leirão.	<i>A Bull</i> : O Touro.

A Cow : A Vaca.
A Heifer : A Novilha.
An Udder : A Ubre.
A Tet : A Teta e máma.
A Bullock : O Novilho.
A Calf : A Vitela, o Bezerro.
A Panther : A Onça animal.
A Polecat : A Marta.
A Rat : O Rato.
A Scorpion : O Escorpião.
A Serpent : A Serpe.
A Sheep : A Ovelha.
A Ram : O Carneiro e Vayvem.
A Weather : O Carneiro capado.
A Lamb : O Cordero.
A Sheep-fold : O Curral de ovelhas.
A Shepherd : O Pastor.
A Sheep-hook : O Cajado.
A Flock : A Manada, o Rebanho.
Wool : A Lãa.
A Fleece : O Vêlo de Lãa.
A Snail : O Caracol.
A Snake : A Cobra.
A Water-snake : A Cobra de água.
An Adder : A Cobra.
A Spider : A Aranha.
A Squirrel : O Ciuro.
A Teck : O Carrapato.
A Tiger : A Tigre.
A Toad : O Sapo.
A Viper : A Víbora.

A Unicorn : O Alicornio.
A Wasp : A Bésa.
A Weazel : A Doninha.
A Wolf : O Lobo.
A Worm : O Bicho, a lombriga.
An Earth-worm : O Minhoco.
A Canker-worm : O Bicho de couve.
A Timber-worm : O Bicho da madeira.
A Silk-worm : O Bicho de seda.

Of Fishes : De Peixes.

A Fish : O Peixe.
The Gills : As Guéllas do peixe.
The Fins : As Barbatanas.
The Scale : A Escama.
A Shell-fish : O Marisco de concha.
A Shell : A Concha.
A Fisherman : O Pescador.
A Net : A Rede.
An Angle-rod : A Cana de pescar.
A Line : A Sedela.
A Hook : O Anzól.
A Bait : A Isca.
A Plummet : O Prumo.
A Fishmonger : O Pescadéiro.
Salt-fish : O Badéjo.
A Barbel : O Barbo.

A Cockle : A Améjioa.
A Cramp-fish : O Peixe tremelga.
A Cod-fish : A Pescáda.
A Conger : O Cónegro.
A Crab : O capateiro.
A Crevisé : O Caranguêjo.
A Dolphin : O Golfinho.
An Eel : A Enguia, o cyró e sáfio.
A Gudgeon : O Cadóz.
A Herring : O Arénque.
A Lampray : A Lampréa.
A Lobster : A Lagosta.
A Mackrel : A Sarda.
A Mullet : A Teinha.
Muscles : Mexilhóens.
An Otter : A Lontra.
An Oyster : A Ostra.
A Salmon : O Salmão.
A Sea-calf : O Boy marinho.
A Shrimp : O Camarão.
A Sole : A Sólha e Linguáda.
A Sturgeon : O Peixe folho.
A Thornback : A Ráya.
A Tortoise : A Tartaruga, o Cágado.
A Trout : A Truita.
A Whale : A Balea.
A Whiting : O Faneco.

Of Husbandry : De Lavoura.

A Husbandman : O Lavrador.

A Countryman : O Camponéz.
Ground : A Terra.
A Field : O Campo.
A Farm : A Herdade de raiz.
A Tenant : O Rendeyro.
A Bailiff : O Quinteiro.
Arable Land : O Campo que se lavra.
A Turf : O Torrao.
Dung : O Esterco.
A Meadow : O Prado.
An Inclosure : O Cercado.
Grass : A Erva.
Hay : O Feno.
An Hay-loft : O Lugar de feno.
A Rake : Os Ancinhos.
A Plough-man : O Lavrador, Arador.
A Plough : O Arado.
A Plough-handle : A Esteva.
A Plough-share : A Rélha.
The Plough-staff : A Ra-bica.
The Coulter : O Ferro do arado.
A Yoke : O Júgo.
A Goad : O Agulhão.
An Harrow : As Grádes de destorreár.
A Furrow : O Régo do arado.
An Acre : A Géira.
Seed : A Semente.
Standing Corn : A Seára.

Harvest : A Séga.
A Sheaf : A Gavéla.
A Handful : A Féixe.
A Reaping-book : A Fouce.
Stubble : A Pálha.
An Ear : A Espíga.
The Blade : O Colmo.
The Beard of an Ear : A
 Arésta da espíga.
A Shock : O Montão.
A Wain : O Cárro de quá-
 tro rodas.
A Cart : O Cárro.
A Carter : O Carréyro.
A Wheel : A Róda.
A Spoke : O Ráyo.
An Axle-tree : O Eyxo.
A Whip : O Zorrágue.
A Barn : O Celéiro.
A Barn-floor : A Eyra.
A Granary : O Granél.
A Thresher : O Debulha-
 dor.
A Flail : O Trílho.
Straw : A Pálha.
Chaff : A Alimpadúra.
A Sieve : A Ciranda.
A Fan : A Joéira.
Grain : O Grão.
Bread-corn : O Pão em
 grão.
A Husk : A Bainha.
A Shale : A Cáscã.
A Cod : O Folhélho.
A Bean : A Fáva.
A Pease : A Ervilha.
Vetches : O Erváço.
Wheat : O Trigo.

Rye : O Centéo.
Barley : A Ceváda.
Pulse : O Legúme.
Oats : A Avéa.
Tares : A Cizânia.
Darnel : O Jóyo.
Rice : A Arróz.
Miller : O Mílho.

Of Herbs and Flowers : De
 Ervas e Flóres.

A Stalk : O Táo.
A Turnip : O Nábo.
A Carret : A Cenoura.
A Parsnip : A Cenoura
 bráncã.
A Raddish : O Rábão.
Coleworts : A Couve.
Lettice : A Alfáce.
An Artichoke : A Alcachó-
 fra.
Parsley : A Sálfa.
An Onion : A Cebólla.
Garlick : O Alho.
A Leek : O Pórro.
A Cucumber : O Pepíno.
Sorrel : As Azédas.
Water-creffes : O Mastrúço
 de ágoa.
A Marygold : O Bem me
 quéres.
A Flower-de-luce : A Flor
 del is, o lírio.
Saffron : O Açafrão.
Pennyroyal : O Poéjo.
A Melon : O Melão.
Mustard :

Mustard : A Mostárda.
Anise : A Erva doce.
Cummin : Os Cominhos.
Fennel : O Fúncho.
Thyme : O Toinilho.
Marjoram : A Manjeróna.
A Gilliflower : O Crávo e góyvo.
Lavender : A Alfazema.
A Rose : A Rôsa.
Rosemary : O Alecrim.
A Tulip : A Tulipa.
A Lilly : A Cebolla cécem, Açucena.
A Violet : A Violéta.
A Thistle : O Cárdo.
Sperage : O Espárgo.
Moss : O Músgo.
Sedge : Cãnas de lagoas.
Mallows : Málvas.
A Nettle : A Ortiga.
Hyssop : O Isôpo.
Mint : A Ortelã.
Rue : A Arrúda.
Sage : A Sálva.
Wormwood : A Lófna.
Camomil : A Macélla.
Coltsfoot : A Unha de cavállo.
Fern : O Féto.
Broom : A Giêsta.
Hemlock : O Canúdo, a anfarinha.
Poppey : A Dormedéira.

Of Trees and Shrubs : De
 Arvores e Máta.

A Plant : A Plânta.
A Tree : A Arvore.
A Bough : O Râmo.
A Green Leaf : A Fólha verde.
A Leaf fallen : A Fólha caída.
The Stick of a Tree : O Trônco.
The Bark : A Cortiça.
A Twig : A Vêrga.
An Osier : O Vime.
The Root : A Raíz.
The Juice : O cúmo.
Fruit : O Frúito.
An Apple-tree : A Macéira.
An Apple : A Maçã.
A Pear-tree : A Peréyra.
A Pear : A Péra.
A Cherry-tree : A Cerejéira.
A Cherry : A Ceréja.
A Box-tree : O Búxo árvore.
A Plumb-tree : A Ameixéira.
A Plumb : A Améixa.
A Fig-tree : A Figueyra.
A Fig : O Figo.
An Olive-tree : A Olivéyra.
An Olive : A Azeitóna.
An Ash-tree : O Fréixo.
A Beech-tree : A Fáya.

- A Wild Ash* : O Fréixo Sylvéstre.
A Poplar-tree : O Alémo e Chóupo.
A Palm-tree : O Plátano.
An Elm : O Olmo.
An Oak : O Carválho.
A Fir-tree : O Pinhéiro.
A Willow : O Salguéiro.
A Cedar : O Cédro.
A Cypress : O Aciprésse.
A Palm-tree : A Palméira.
A Pine-tree : O Pinhéiro.
A Nut-tree : A Aveléyra.
A Nut-shell : A Cáscia de avelã.
A Kernel : O Miólo de avelã.
A Walnut : A Noz.
A Chestnut : A Castánha.
A Medlar : A Néspéra.
An Almond-tree : A Amendoeira.
An Almond : A Amendoa.
A Cork-tree : O Soveréyro.
A Bay-tree : O Louréyro.
A Berry : A Bága.
A Date : A Támara.
A Quince : O Marmélo.
An Orange : A Laránja.
A Citron : A Cidra.
A Limon : O Limão.
A Warden : O Codórno.
An Apricock : O Damálco.
A Peach : O Pessêgo.
A Strawberry : O Morangam.
A Blackberry : A Amóra bráva.
A Mulberry : A Amóra.
An Ivierry : A Bága de éra.
Curran : As Pássas de Coryntha.
Sugar : O Açúcar.
Pepper : A Piménta.
Ginger : O Gingívre.
Cinamon : A Canélla.
Nutmeg : A Noz nosçada.
Frankincense : O Encénso.
Myrrh : A Mirra.
Rosin : A Resina.
Turpentine : A Termentina.
Amber : O Alámbre.
Pitch : O Pez.

Of a Garden : De Jardim ou Orta.
A Gardener : O Jardinéiro e ortelão.
An Orchard : O Pomar.
An Arbour : A Remalhada.
An Hedge : A Sébe.
A Maze : O Labarinto.
A Spade : O Enxadao.
A Mattock : O Alvião.
A Shovel : A Enxada e o Ancinho.
A Pick-ax : O Alvião.
A Weeding-hook : A Roçadaira.

A Bed for Herbs : O Can-
téiro.

A Graft : O Enxérto.

A Shoot : O Pimpólho.

A Pruning-book : O Podão.

A Prop : O Estéo.

A Roller : A Roléyra de
pédra.

Of Verbs : De Verbos.

To be Able : Poder.

To Abound : Abundár
e manár.

To Adorn : Ornár.

To Advise : Amoesár e A-
vizár.

To Afford : Dar.

To Affright : Amedron-
tár.

To be afraid : Arrepiárse.

To Fear : Temér.

To Amaze : Espantár.

To be Amazed : Pasmár.

To Amend : Emendár.

To be Angry : Irárse.

To Anoint : Untár.

To Answer : Respondér.

To Appear : Aparecér.

To Appease : Aplacár.

To Appoint : Determinár.

To Arise : Alevantárse.

To Arise brightly : Nacér.

To Arm : Armár.

To Arrive : Chegár.

To Ask : Rogár.

To Assure : Prometér.

To Assuage : Affagár.

To Attempt : Aparelhár.

To Awake : Espertár.

To Awake : Acordár de
sóno.

To Aim : Distinár.

To Aim : Apontár.

To Bake : Assár no fórnio.

To Banish : Desterrár.

To be Banished : Andár de-
sterrádo.

To Bargain : Fazér concér-
to.

To Bark : Ladrár.

To Be : Ser e Estár.

To Bear : Levár e Trazér.

To Beat : Ferir.

To be Beaten : Ser açoutá-
do.

To Become : Comvém.

To Beget : Gerár.

To Begin : Começár.

To Behold : Olhár.

To Believe : Crér.

To Bellow : Mugir e ber-
rár.

To Bend : Dobrár.

To Bend : Emborçár.

To be Benumm'd : Estár
trópego.

To Bequeath : Fazér doa-
çám.

To Besmear : Untár.

To Beware : Acautelárse.

To Bind : Atár.

To Bite : Mordér.

To Blab : Fallár vaidá-
des.

To

- To Blame* : Vituperár.
To Bless : Benzer.
To Blot : Manchár.
To Blot out : Borrár.
To Blow : Assoprar.
To Boil : Cozer.
To Boil : Fervér.
To be Born : Nacer.
To Brag : Vaugloriar-se.
To Brandish : Brandir.
To Bray : Pisar.
To Bray : Zurrar o áfno.
To Break : Quebrár.
To Break a Law : Violár.
To Breakfast : Almoçar.
To Breathe : Espirar.
To Breathe much : Offegár.
To Bring : Trazer.
To Bring forth : Parir.
To Bring up : Criar.
To Brush : Barrer.
To Build : Edificar.
To Burn : Queimar.
To Burn : Ardér.
To Bury : Enterrar.
To Buy : Comprár.
To Call : Nomeár.
To Call for : Chamár.
To Care : Curár.
To Carry : Levár.
To Cast : Arremecár.
To Cast off : Engeitar.
To Catch : Prender.
To Cease : Deixar e Cef-
 sár.
To Change : Mudár.
To Charge : Mandár.
To Chastise : Castigar.
- To Cheat* : Eugar.
To Cherish : Fomentár.
To Chide : Reprender.
To Chide : Contender.
To Choak : Affogar.
To Claim : Tomar para si.
To Clap : Bater as palmas.
To Claw : Coçar.
To be Clear : Ser manifestó.
To Cleave : Fender.
To Cleave to : Pegar e a pe-
 gar-se.
To Climb : Subir.
To Cloath : Vestir.
To be Cold : Esfriar-se.
To Comb : Penteár.
To Come : Vir.
To Comfort : Consolar.
To Command : Mandár.
To Commit : Fazer.
To Compass : Cingir.
To Compel : Constranger.
To Complain : Queixar-se.
To Condemn : Condenar.
To Confess : Confessar.
To Confute : Confutar.
To Consume : Consumir.
To Consume : Apodrecer.
To Convince : Convencer.
To Cover : Encubrir.
To Counsel : Aconselhar.
To Coin : Fazer moeda.
To Crack : Estalar.
To Create : Criar.
To Creep : Andar de gatin-
 has.
To Cry like a Child : Cho-
 rar o menino.

To Cry out : Gritár.
To Curse : Amaldiçoár.
To Cut : Cortár.
To Dance : Baclár.
To Dare : Ousár.
To Deceive : Enganár.
To Dedicate : Dedicár.
To Defend : Defendér.
To Delight : Recreár.
To Delight : Delitárse.
To Deliver to : Entregár.
To Deliver from : Livrar.
To Demand : Querelár e Demandár.
To Deny : Negár.
To Depart : Mudárse com cása e Partír.
To Deserve : Merecer.
To Desire : Desejár.
To Despise : Desprezár.
To Devise : Fingír e Maquinár.
To Devour : Engulír e Tragár.
To Dig : Cavár.
To Dine : Jantár.
To Dip : Tingír.
To Disjoint : Desengoçar os membros.
To Dispatch : Expedír.
To Dissemble : Dissimulár.
To Divide : Dividír e partír.
To Do : Fazér.
To Doer : Desvariár.
To Doubt : Duvidár.
To Draw : Levár á rásto.
To Draw out : Tirár fóra.

To Draw Water : Tirár água.
To Draw a Sword : Desembainhár.
To Drink : Beber.
To Drink to : Brindár.
To Ease : Aliviár.
To Eat : Comer.
To Embrace : Abraçar.
To be Empty : Estár vazio.
To Encourage : Animár.
To Endure : Sofrer.
To Endure : Durár.
To Engrave : Esculpír.
To Enjoy : Sográr.
To Enquire : Perguntár.
To Enter : Entrár.
To Entice : Affagár.
To Establish : Estabelecer.
To Esteem : Estimár.
To Excel : Levár ventagem.
To Fall : Cair.
To Fall down : Derribárse.
To Falter : Vanquejár e Escorregár.
To Fasten : Fincár de Pregár.
To Favour : Favorecer.
To Fear : Temér e receár.
To Feign : Fingír.
To Feed : Apacentár.
To Feed : Comer.
To Feel : Apalpár.
To Fetch : Alcançar.
To Fight : Pelejár.
To File : Limár.
To Fill : Encher.

- To Find* : Achár.
To Flow : Correr.
To Flow from : Manár.
To Fly as a Bird : Voár.
To Fly from : Fugir.
To Flatter : Lisongear.
To Fold : Dobrar.
To Follow : Seguir.
To Forbid : Tolher.
To Forget : Esquecer.
To Forswear : Perjurar.
To Fortifie : Fortalecer.
To Gape : Bocejar.
To Gather together : Aju-
 tar.
To Gather from : Colher.
To Get : Alcançar.
To Give : Dar.
To be Glad : Fazer mené-
 os com alegria.
To Gnaw : Roer.
To Go : Ir e andar.
To Go on : Ir por diante.
To Govern : Governar.
To Grave : Eléulpir.
To be Green : Estar verde.
To Grieve : Doer-se.
It Grieveth : Ter dor ou
 vergonha.
To Grind : Moer.
To Grin : Risar os cãens.
To Groan : Gemer.
To Handle : Tratar.
To Hang : Pendurar.
To Hang : Enfurcar.
To Harrow : Gradar a
 terra.
To Hasten : Apressar.
- To Hasten* : Ir Depressa.
To Hate : Aborrecer.
To Have : Ter e AVer.
To Have rather : Antes
 querer.
To Heal : Sarar e Ame-
 zinhár.
To Hear : Ouvir.
To Harken : Escutar.
To Hedge : Cercar com se-
 be.
To Hide : Escondér.
To Hide : Escondér-se.
To Hinder : Impedir.
To Hiss : Atfoviár.
To Hiss : Rangér.
To Hold : Ter e possuir.
To Hold one's Peace : Cal-
 lár.
To Hope : Esperar.
To be Hot : Estar quente.
To Howl : Huyvár.
To Hunt : Caçar.
To Hurt : Empecer.
To Imitate : Imitar.
To Increase : Acrecentar.
To Increase : Crecer.
To Intreat : Orar, Rogar.
To Join : Juntar.
It Irketh : Enfastia.
To Itch : Prur e ter comi-
 chão.
To Keep : Guardar.
To Kill : Matar.
To be Kind : Regalar.
To Kiss : Beijar.
To Knit : Atar e fiar.
To Knock : Bater.

<i>To Know</i> : Sabér.	<i>To Mutter</i> : Resimóneár.
<i>To Labour</i> : Trabalhá.	<i>To Name</i> : Nomeár.
<i>To Lament</i> : Lamentár.	<i>To Nod</i> : Acenár.
<i>To Languish</i> : Estár de- leixádo.	<i>To Nourish</i> : Criár e man- tér.
<i>To Laugh</i> : Rir.	<i>To Obey</i> : Obedecér.
<i>To be Lawful</i> : Ser lícito.	<i>To Obtain</i> : Gozár.
<i>To Lead</i> : Guiár.	<i>To Offend</i> : Offendér.
<i>To Lean on</i> : Arrimáse.	<i>To Offend</i> : Peccár.
<i>To Leap</i> : Saltár.	<i>To Open</i> : Abrir.
<i>To Learn</i> : Aprender.	<i>To be Open</i> : Estár mani- fésto.
<i>To Leave off</i> : Desampa- rá.	<i>To Overcome</i> : Vencér.
<i>To Leave</i> : Deixár.	<i>To Owe</i> : Devér.
<i>To Lessen</i> : Diminuir.	<i>To Paint</i> : Pintár.
<i>To Lick</i> : Lambér.	<i>To be Pale</i> : Estár ama- réllo.
<i>To Lift up</i> : Alevantár.	<i>To Pant</i> : Latejár.
<i>To Linger</i> : Detérse.	<i>To Pardon</i> : Perdoár.
<i>To Live</i> : Vivér.	<i>To Patch</i> : Remendár.
<i>To Lose</i> : Perdér.	<i>To Pay</i> : Pagár.
<i>To Loosen</i> : Desatár.	<i>To Pierce</i> : Furár e pene- trár.
<i>To be Loud</i> : Fazér tra- quináda.	<i>To Perceive</i> : Sentír.
<i>To Love</i> : Amár, Querér.	<i>To Permit</i> : Permitir.
<i>To Lie</i> : Mentír.	<i>To Persuade</i> : Persuadir.
<i>To Lye along</i> : Jazér.	<i>To Pitch</i> : Alojár o ar- rayál.
<i>To Lye hid</i> : Escondérse.	<i>To Pitch</i> : Poujár e assen- társe.
<i>To Make</i> : Fazér.	<i>To Pity</i> : Avér miserecór- dia.
<i>To Marry</i> : Casár.	<i>To Play</i> : Jugár.
<i>To be Married</i> : Casárse.	<i>To Please</i> : Contentár.
<i>To Measure</i> : Medír.	<i>To Please</i> : Vir á vontá- de.
<i>To Meditate</i> : Meditár.	<i>To Plough</i> : Arár e La- vrár.
<i>To Milk</i> : Ordenhá.	
<i>To Mingle</i> : Misturár.	
<i>To Mistake</i> : Errár.	
<i>To Move</i> : Movér.	
<i>To Mourn</i> : Chorár.	
<i>To Murmur</i> : Murmurár.	

- To Pluck* : Beliscár.
To Polish : Poir.
To Pollute : Sujár.
To Pour : Derramár.
To Prate : Palrár.
To Pray : Rogár.
To Press : Apremár.
To Prick : Picár.
To Procure : Procurár.
To Profane : Profanár.
To Promise : Prometér.
To Prove : Provár.
To Prop : Softentár.
To Provide : Aparelhár.
To Provoke : Desafiár.
To Punish : Punir, Casti-
 gár.
To Purge : Purgár.
To Put : Pôr.
To Put off : Despir.
To Put on : Vestir.
To Quench : Apagár.
To Quiet : Adormecér á
 outrem.
To be Quiet : Repousár.
To Rage : Doudejár.
To Rain : Chover.
To Read : Ler.
To Refuse : Recusár.
To Rejoice : Folgár.
To Remember : Lembrár-
 se.
To Repent : Arrependérse.
To Return : Rendir.
To Return : Tornár.
To Revenge : Vingár.
To Roar : Rugir.
To Roast : Assár.
To Rob : Roubár.
To Rule : Régér ou Gover-
 nár.
To Rule : Reynár.
To Run : Correr.
To Sacrifice : Sacrificár.
To Sail : Navegár.
To Satisfie : Satisfazer.
To Say : Dizér.
To Scatter : Espalhár.
To Scratch : Coçar.
To Search : Esquadrinhár.
To Season : Adubár e salpi-
 cár.
To See : Ver e olhár.
To Seek : Buscar.
To Sell : Vender.
To Send : Enviar.
To Send for : Chamár.
To Separate : Apartár e Se-
 parár.
To Serve : Servir.
To Shake : Tremér.
To Shake : Sacudir.
It Shameth : Ter vergon-
 ha.
To Shave : Raspár.
To Shear : Tosquiár.
To Shew : Moltrar.
To Shine : Resplandecér.
To Shun : Evitár e fu-
 gir.
To Shun : Fechár.
To be Sick : Adoecer.
To be Silent : Callár.
To Sing : Cantár.
To Sin : Peccár.
To Sit : Assentár.

<i>To be Skilful in</i> : Entender.	<i>To Study</i> : Estudár.
<i>To Sleep</i> : Dormir.	<i>To Stuff</i> : Recheár, recal- cár.
<i>To Slide</i> : Escorregár.	<i>To Stumble</i> : Tropeçar.
<i>To Smell</i> : Cheirár deitán- do chéiro.	<i>To Suck</i> : Mamár.
<i>To Smell</i> : Cheirár tomán- do chéiro.	<i>To Suffer</i> : Padecer.
<i>To Sneez</i> : Espirrar.	<i>To Sup</i> : Ceár.
<i>To Snort</i> : Roucár dormin- do.	<i>To Sup up</i> : Sorvér.
<i>To Snow</i> : Nevár.	<i>To Suppose</i> : Supór.
<i>To Sob</i> : Soluçár.	<i>To Swear</i> : Jurár.
<i>To be Sold</i> : Venderse.	<i>To Sweat</i> : Suár.
<i>To Sow or Plant</i> : Semeár.	<i>To Swell</i> : Inchárfse.
<i>To Sow or Stitch</i> : Coser.	<i>To Swim</i> : Nadár.
<i>To Spare</i> : Perdoár.	<i>To Take</i> : Tomár.
<i>To Speak</i> : Fallár.	<i>To Take away</i> : Tirár.
<i>To Spit</i> : Cuspír.	<i>To Tame</i> : Amanfár.
<i>To Spin</i> : Fiár.	<i>To be Tame</i> : Fazérse mán- fo.
<i>To Sprinkle</i> : Derramár.	<i>To Tarry</i> : Detérse ou De- tér.
<i>To Stagger</i> : Vanguerár.	<i>To Taste</i> : Gostár.
<i>To Stand</i> : Estár quédo ou em pé.	<i>To Taste</i> : Ter Sabór.
<i>To Stay</i> : Tolhér ou Ve- dár.	<i>To Teach</i> : Enfinár.
<i>To Stay</i> : Ficár.	<i>To Tear</i> : Rasgár.
<i>To Steal</i> : Furtár.	<i>To Tell</i> : Contár.
<i>To Step</i> : Andár.	<i>To Think</i> : Cuydár.
<i>To Stick to</i> : Apegárfse.	<i>To Think</i> : Ter pára si.
<i>To be Stiff</i> : Enregelárfse.	<i>To Thirst</i> : Ter Séde.
<i>To Stink</i> : Fedér.	<i>To Threaten</i> : Ameacár.
<i>To Stir up</i> : Commovér.	<i>To Throw down</i> : Derru- bár.
<i>To Stop</i> : Fazér parár.	<i>To Thrust</i> : Empuxár.
<i>To Stretch</i> : Estender.	<i>To Thunder</i> : Trovejár.
<i>To Strike</i> : Ferir.	<i>To Tingle</i> : Retinír o me- tál.
<i>To Strive</i> : Contendér.	<i>To Touch</i> : Tocár.
<i>To be Strong</i> : Ter fôrça e vigor.	<i>To Tread on</i> : Pizár aos pés.

<i>To Tremble</i> : Tremér.	<i>To Whet</i> : Aguçar.
<i>To Trust</i> : Confiar-se.	<i>To be Wise</i> : Saber.
<i>To Try</i> : Tentár.	<i>To Wish</i> : Desejar.
<i>To Turn</i> : Virár.	<i>To Wither</i> : Murchár-se.
<i>To Turn</i> : Tornár-se.	<i>To Wonder</i> : Espantár-se.
<i>To Tie</i> : Atár.	<i>To Write</i> : Escrevér.
<i>To Vex</i> : Avexár.	<i>To Yeild</i> : Dar lugar ou ventagem.
<i>To Vex</i> : Agastár-se.	
<i>To View</i> : Especulár.	
<i>To Vomit</i> : Vomitar.	
<i>To Vow</i> : Prometér e votar.	<i>Of Adjectives</i> : De Nomes Adjectivos.
<i>To Urge</i> : Apertár.	
<i>To Use</i> : Usár.	<i>ALL</i> : Tudo e todo.
<i>To Use</i> : Soer.	<i>Alone</i> : Só.
<i>To Wail</i> : Pranteár.	<i>Another</i> : Outro.
<i>To Wait for</i> : Esperár.	<i>Ancient</i> : Antigo.
<i>To Walk</i> : Andár passeando.	<i>Awry</i> : Esquelhado torto.
<i>To Wander</i> : Andár vagabundo.	<i>Bad</i> : Máo.
<i>To Want</i> : Carecér e avér miltér.	<i>Bald</i> : Calvo.
<i>To be Wanting</i> : Faltár.	<i>Base</i> : Tórpe.
<i>To be Warm</i> : Estár mórno.	<i>Begging</i> : Suplicante.
<i>To Wash</i> : Lavár.	<i>Big with Child</i> : Prénhe.
<i>To Waste</i> : Destruír.	<i>Bitter</i> : Amargoso.
<i>To Waste</i> : Apodrecér.	<i>Black</i> : Negro, preto.
<i>To Water</i> : Regár.	<i>Blind</i> : Cégo.
<i>To Wear</i> : Trazér.	<i>Blew</i> : Azul.
<i>To Wear out</i> : Trilhár e gastár.	<i>Bread</i> : Lárgo.
<i>To Weary</i> : Canfár.	<i>Brute</i> : Brúto.
<i>To Weave</i> : Tecér.	<i>Calm</i> : Seréno.
<i>To Weep</i> : Chorár.	<i>Cheap</i> : Vil e barráto.
<i>To Weigh</i> : Pesár.	<i>Cheerful</i> : Alégre.
<i>To be Wet</i> : Molhár-se.	<i>Clean</i> : Límpo.
	<i>Clear</i> : Cláro.
	<i>Covetous</i> : Avaréno.
	<i>Courteous</i> : Cortéz.
	<i>Dark</i> : Escúro.
	<i>Deaf</i> : Súrdo.
	<i>Diligent</i> :

Diligent : Diligente.
Doubtful : Duvidoso.
Drunk : Bévado.
Dumb : Múdo.
Each : Cáda hum.
Easie : Fácil.
Eloquent : Facundo.
Envious : Invejoso.
Equal : Iguál.
Everlasting : Eterno.
Fair : Fermoso.
Faithful : Fiél.
False : Fálso.
Fat : Gordo.
Few : Poucos.
Filthy : Féo.
Foolish : Nécio.
Free : Livre.
Full : Chéo.
Gentle : Mánso.
Godly : Piadoso.
Goodly : Bom.
Great : Grande.
Guilty : Culpádo.
Happy : Feliz.
High : Alto.
Hoarse : Róuco.
Holy : Santo.
Humble : Humilde.
Imperfect : Imperfeito.
Industrious : Industrioso.
Joyful : Festival.
Just : Jústio.
Kind : Amigável.
Knowing : Sábio.
Lame : Mánco e Aleijádo.
Late : Tárde.
Light : Léve.

Little : Pequeno.
Long : Comprido.
Lusty : Vigoroso.
Manifest : Manifesto.
Many : Muitos.
Merciful : Meserecordioso.
Miserable : Miserável.
Modest : Modéstio.
Naked : Nú e Nua.
Near : Péto.
Necessary : Necessário.
New : Nôvo e moderno.
Often : Frequente.
Old : Vélho.
Outward : Cónsa de fóra.
Pale : De cor cárdea e amarela.
Perpetual : Perpétuo.
Plentiful : Fertil.
Poor : Pobre.
Prodigal : Pródigo.
Proud : Sobérbo.
Publick : Público.
Pure : Púro.
Quick : Ligéiro.
Quick-witted : Sagáz.
Rare : Ráro.
Rash : Termerário.
Red : Vermelho.
Ripe : Madúro.
Round : Redondo.
Rude : Rúde.
Sad : Triste.
Savage : Salvágem, Bárbaro.
Secret : Segrédo.

Short :

Short : Brève.
Sick : Doente.
Simple : Simples.
Soft : Mólle.
Soure : Azêdo.
Strong : Forte.
Such : Tal.
Sure : Certo.
Sweet : Doce.
Tall : Alto.
Tender : Ténro.
Thankful : Agradecido.
Thick : Gróssô, básto e espéssô.
Thin : Delgádo.
True : Verdádeyro.
Twin : Gémeos.
Vain : Vão e vã.
Valiant : Valoróso e esforçádo.

Unsavory : Dessaboróso.
Unwilling : Contra a vontade.
Utmost : Estremo.
Wandering : Vagabúndo.
Wanton : Lacívio.
Weak : Fráco.
Weary : Cançado.
Wet : Molhado.
White : Alvo e branco.
Whole : Inteiro.
Wicked : Impio e malvado.
Wild : Brávo.
Wise : Prudente.
Witty : Faceto.
Worthy : Digno e Digno.
Wounded : Ferido.
Yellow : Amarello.



FINIS.